Uttar Pradesh Rajarshi
Tandon Open University

Master of Arts

MAEN-119(N)

New Literatures in English

Block-1	**South Asian Literature**	
Unit-1	Introduction to South Asian Literature	5
Unit-2	Agha Shahid Ali : *'Post Card from Kashmir'*	13
Unit-3	Kishwar Naheed : *' I am not That Woman'*	20
Unit-4	Shyam Selvadurai : *'Funny Boy'*	31
Block-2	**Australian Literature**	
Unit-5	Introduction to Australian Literature	42
Unit-6	A.D. Hope : *' Australia'*	50
Unit-7	Judith Wright : *'The Company of Lovers'*	67
Unit-8	Banjo Paterson : '*The Man From Snowy River'*	76
Block-3	**Canadian Literature**	
Unit-9	Introduction to Canadian Literature	88
Unit-10	Susanna Moodie : *'Indian Summer'*	97
Unit-11	Margaret Atwood : *' The Blind Assassin'.*	110
Unit-12	Toni Morrison : *Beloved*	120
Block-4	**African Literature**	
Unit-13	Introduction to African Literature	136
Unit-14	Chinua Achebe : *Things Fall Apart*	148
Unit-15	Dennis Brutus : '*At a Funeral'*	159
Unit-16	Derek Walcott : *' A Far Cry From Africa'*	168

Advisory Committee

Prof. Satyakam	**Vice-Chancellor**
Prof. S. P. Tiwari	**Director, School of Humanities**
Mr. Vinay Kumar	**Registrar**

Course Design Committee

Prof. O. N. Upadhyay	Department of English and Modern European Languages, University of Lucknow, Lucknow
Prof. Sanjay Prasad Sharma	Department of English, Mahamaya Government Degree College, Dhanupur, Handia, Prayagraj
Prof. Jaya Kapoor	Department of English and Modern European Languages, University of Allahabad, Prayagraj
Dr. Satyamvada Singh	Department of English, C.M.P. Degree College, Prayagraj
Dr. Shivendra Pratap Singh	School of Humanities (English), UPRTOU, Prayagraj

Course Co-Ordination

Dr. Shivendra Pratap Singh	School of Humanities (English), UPRTOU, Prayagraj

Editor

Dr. Mohd. Shamim	Associate Professor of English Halim Muslim P G College, Kanpur

Writers

Dr.Sanjeev Vishwakarama Assistant Professor of English DDU University, Gorakhpur	Unit 1, 2, 5, 9, 11
Dr.Aarti Vishwakarma Assistant Professor of English Mahatma Gandhi Kashi Vidyapith, Varanasi	Unit 3,4,7
Dr. Neelam Singh Assistant Professorof English Allahabad Degree College, Prayagraj	Unit 6, 16
Dr. Sangeeta Varshney Associate Professor of English AKTU, Lucknow	Unit 8,10,12,15
Dr. Divya Bakshi Assistant Professor of English S D College, Muzaffarnagar	Unit 13, 14

© UPRTOU, Prayagraj. 2025 **MAEN-119(N) - New Literatures in English**

First Edition : July 2025 **ISBN :- 978-93-4781-38-4**

All rights are reserved. No part of this work may be reproduced in any form, by mimeograph or any other means, without permission in writing from the Uttar Pradesh Rajarshi Tandon Open University.



http ://creativecommons.org/licenses/by-sa/4.0/

Creative Commons Attribution-Share Alike 4.0 International License

Printed by : Chandrakala Universal Pvt.Ltd. 42/7 JLN Road, Prayagraj, 211002

BLOCK-I

INTRODUCTION

The emergence of *New Literatures in English* marks one of the most dynamic and transformative developments in modern literary studies. Rooted in the experiences of formerly colonized societies, diasporic communities, and culturally hybrid identities, these literatures challenge the authority of traditional English canonical writing and expand the boundaries of what constitutes literary expression in English.

In this block you will study be reading the recent literary developments in South Asian countries like India, Pakistan, Sri Lanka, Bangladesh, Bhutan etc., emerging from the experience of colonialism. South Asian Literature, a rich and diverse body of work, encompasses the literary tradition of a region with a profound history and cultural complexity. This block is divided into four units. **Unit One** discusses the historical and literary background of South Asian Literature. In **Unit Two** Agha Shahid Ali's poem "Postcard from Kashmir" describes the poet's nostalgic longing for his homeland. The poem is written in a simple yet powerful style. It reflects how distance reduces Kashmir's vast, beautiful landscape into a small postcard image. **Unit Three** Kishwar Naheed's poem "I Am Not That Woman" gives voice to female agency and resistance within patriarchal societies, representing the feminist dimension of South Asian writing. **Unit Four** Shyam Selvadurai's novel *Funny Boy* extends these concerns by exploring questions of sexuality, ethnic conflict, and the search for selfhood during Sri Lanka's civil unrest. Together, these texts demonstrate how South Asian writers use English not only to depict regional realities but also to challenge hegemonic narratives and reclaim cultural autonomy.

UNIT-1 INTRODUCTION TO SOUTH ASIAN LITERATURE

Structure

1.0 Objective

1.1 Introduction

1.2 History of South Asia

1.3 Literature from South Asian Countries

1.4 Prominent Authors of South Asian Literature

1.5 Let Us Sum Up

1.6 Questions

1.7 Further Readings

1.0 OBJECTIVE

The objective of reading "Introduction to South Asian Literature" in postgraduate courses in India is to provide students with a comprehensive understanding of the diverse literary traditions and contemporary narratives from the South Asian region. This course aims to foster a deep appreciation of the varied cultural, historical, and social contexts that shape the literature of countries like India, Pakistan, Bangladesh, Sri Lanka, Nepal, Bhutan, and the Maldives. Through critical analysis of seminal works and authors, students are encouraged to engage with complex themes such as identity, migration, colonialism, and the intersection of the personal and political, enhancing their analytical, interpretative, and comparative literature skills.

1.1 INTRODUCTION

South Asian literature, a rich and diverse body of work, encompasses the literary traditions of a region with a profound history and cultural complexity. This area includes India, Pakistan, Bangladesh, Nepal, Sri Lanka, Bhutan, and the Maldives. Historically, South Asian literature has its roots in ancient texts like the Vedas and the epics of the Ramayana and the Mahabharata, foundational to Indian culture and philosophy. These ancient texts, composed in Sanskrit, set the stage for a literary tradition characterized by both its depth and variety. The evolution of South Asian literature is marked by the co-existence of numerous languages and dialects, each fostering its own literary culture. Major languages include Hindi, Urdu, Bengali, Tamil, and many others. The 20th century witnessed a significant shift, with writers increasingly exploring themes of colonialism, post-colonialism, identity, and social reform. This period also saw the rise of English as a prominent language in South Asian literature, brought to global attention by authors like Rabindranath Tagore, R.K. Narayan, and later, Salman Rushdie and Arundhati Roy. South Asian literature, thus, is not a monolith but a mosaic of narratives, styles, and languages, reflecting the region's complex social and historical conditions. It offers insights into the struggles, aspirations, and rich cultural heritage of its people, making it an indispensable part of world literature.

1.2 HISTORY OF SOUTH ASIA

The history of South Asia, encompassing India, Pakistan, Bangladesh, Nepal, Bhutan, Sri Lanka, and the Maldives, is a rich landscape with varied cultural, religious, and political threads. Spanning thousands of years, this history is marked by significant periods and events, each contributing to the region's unique heritage. The earliest known urban culture of the Indian subcontinent was the Indus Valley Civilization, predominantly situated in present-day Pakistan and

northwest India. Characterized by well-planned cities like Harappa and Mohenjo-Daro, this civilization exhibited advanced architecture, sophisticated art, and remarkable urban planning. The use of standardized weights and measures and a script that remains undeciphered suggest a complex social and economic system. Following the decline of the Indus Valley Civilization, the Vedic Period emerged, marked by the arrival of the Indo-Aryans. The *Vedas*, the oldest scriptures of Hinduism, were composed during this time, laying the foundation for the region's religious and philosophical thoughts. This era saw the rise of varna (caste) system, which shaped the social structure of Hindu society. The Mauryan Empire, founded by Chandragupta Maurya, marked the first large-scale empire in South Asia, unifying much of the Indian subcontinent. Emperor Ashoka, Chandragupta's grandson, is renowned for his conversion to Buddhism and his efforts to spread Buddhist teachings across Asia. Ashoka's edicts, inscribed on pillars and rocks across the region, reflect his governance and ethical principles. Further, regarded as the "Golden Age" of India, the Gupta Empire was marked by significant achievements in science, technology, engineering, art, dialectic, literature, logic, mathematics, astronomy, religion, and philosophy. Classical Indian literature and Hindu culture flourished during this period, with notable works including Kalidasa's plays and Aryabhata's mathematical treatises.

The Islamic influence in South Asia began with the Delhi Sultanate in the 12th century, followed by the Mughal Empire in the 16th century. The Mughals, known for their architectural achievements like the Taj Mahal, fostered a rich cultural and artistic heritage. Akbar the Great's policy of religious tolerance and administrative reforms left a lasting impact on the region. The advent of European powers, particularly the British East India Company, marked the beginning of colonial rule in South Asia. The Battle of Plassey in 1757 signified the Company's ascendancy. The British Raj, established in 1858 after the Indian Rebellion of 1857, brought significant changes in the region's administrative, economic, and social structures. This period also witnessed the rise of nationalist movements. The year 1947 was pivotal in South Asian history as India and Pakistan gained independence from British rule, resulting in the largest mass migration in human history due to the partition based on religious lines. This event left a profound legacy of communal tension and conflict in the region. Post-independence, the countries of South Asia embarked on their respective paths of development and political structuring. India adopted a democratic and secular constitution, while Pakistan experienced several military coups and periods of martial law. Bangladesh emerged as an independent nation in 1971 after a brutal liberation war against Pakistan. The region has seen significant economic growth, but challenges like poverty, communalism, and political instability persist.

South Asia's history is not just about individual nations but also about the interactions between them. The cultural and trade exchanges via the Silk Road, maritime routes, and later, the colonial connections have significantly influenced South Asian societies. The spread of Buddhism from India to other parts of Asia and the impact of Persian culture during the Mughal era are examples of such interactions. An often-overlooked aspect of South Asian history is the role of women and marginalized communities. Women like Rani Lakshmibai in India's freedom struggle or Begum Rokeya in advocating women's education in Bengal played crucial roles. Similarly, the histories of tribal and lower-caste communities offer a different perspective on South Asia's past, often challenging the mainstream narratives. In recent decades, South Asian countries have grappled with various challenges, including political instability, religious extremism, economic disparities, and environmental crises. However, these nations have also witnessed remarkable progress in areas like technology, education, and economic development. The South Asian Association for Regional Cooperation (SAARC) represents an effort to foster regional cooperation and address common challenges.

1.3 LITERATURE FROM SOUTH ASIAN COUNTRIES

The origins of South Asian literature can be traced back to ancient texts such as the *Vedas*, a series of sacred Hindu scriptures written in Sanskrit around 1500 BCE, and the epic poems the *Ramayana* and the *Mahabharata*, which date from approximately the 5th century BCE. These foundational texts not only reflect religious and mythological themes but also offer insights into the social and political life of ancient South Asia. Medieval South Asian literature saw a flourishing of devotional and court poetry, exemplified by the works of poets such as Kabir, a 15th-century mystic poet, and Amir Khusro, a Sufi musician, poet, and scholar in the Delhi Sultanate. This era was marked by a synthesis of Hindu and Islamic cultural elements, which significantly influenced the literary output of the time. The colonial period introduced new literary forms and themes, influenced by Western literary traditions. This period saw the emergence of figures such as Rabindranath Tagore, who became the first non-European to win the Nobel Prize in Literature in 1913 for his book *Gitanjali*. His work, along with that of other South Asian writers, engaged with themes of nationalism, modernity, and social reform. Postcolonial South Asian literature has been characterized by a diverse array of voices and styles, often exploring themes of identity, diaspora, and the legacies of colonialism. Notable authors include Salman Rushdie, whose novel *Midnight's Children* (1981) won the Booker Prize and brought global attention to Indian English literature, and Arundhati Roy, whose debut novel *The God of Small Things* (1997) also won the Booker Prize and delved into the complexities of Indian society. And the contemporary South Asian literature continues to evolve, with writers increasingly addressing issues such as gender, class, and globalization, while also experimenting with narrative forms and styles. This literature remains a vibrant and essential part of world literature, offering unique perspectives on the human experience shaped by the region's history, culture, and languages.

Marked by its profound linguistic diversity, South Asian literature encompasses a rich variety of voices and traditions beyond English, including Hindi, Urdu, Bengali, Tamil, and several other regional languages. Writers like Faiz Ahmed Faiz have contributed significantly to this literary mosaic, blending revolutionary thought with classical Urdu poetics. Parallelly, the emergence of strong female voices such as Ismat Chughtai and Kamala Das has critically engaged with themes of patriarchy, gender roles, and female sexuality, challenging established norms and foregrounding feminist perspectives within the region's literary canon. On the global stage, diasporic South Asian writers have played a crucial role in shaping the contemporary understanding of the subcontinent's literature. Jhumpa Lahiri, for instance, in her Pulitzer Prize-winning collection *Interpreter of Maladies* (1999), powerfully explores themes of migration, cultural displacement, and the Indian-American identity. As literature evolves in the digital age, new genres, formats, and platforms have emerged, making South Asian writing more accessible and diverse than ever. The proliferation of online literary spaces has enabled a resurgence of vernacular literature, inviting a broader readership and encouraging experimentation with form and language. Together, these developments underscore the dynamic and multifaceted nature of South Asian literature in both regional and global contexts.

South Asian literature, encompassing the literary traditions of countries such as Pakistan, Bangladesh, Nepal, Sri Lanka, and the Maldives, offers an extraordinarily rich and diverse body of work that reflects the complex interplay of language, history, culture, and identity. While Indian literature often dominates the discourse, these neighbouring literatures contribute distinctive voices that engage deeply with their respective national experiences. Pakistani literature, for example, powerfully articulates the post-Partition trauma and the continuing tensions between tradition and modernity through works like Mohsin Hamid's *The Reluctant Fundamentalist* (2007) and Bapsi Sidhwa's *Ice-Candy-Man (1989).* Similarly, Bangladeshi literature, shaped profoundly by the Liberation War of 1971, explores themes of nation-building, religious conflict, and socio-political

upheaval in texts such as Taslima Nasrin's *Lajja* (1993) and Akhtaruzzaman Elias's *Chilekothar Sepai (The Soldier in the Attic*) (1987). Nepalese literary voices, particularly that of Laxmi Prasad Devkota in *Muna Madan (1936)*, reveal the socio-economic and linguistic diversity of a country rich in oral and written traditions. Sri Lankan literature, written in Sinhala, Tamil, and English, addresses colonial legacies and ethnic strife, as seen in Michael Ondaatje's *Anil's Ghost* (2000) and Shyam Selvadurai's *Funny Boy (1994)*, both of which explore themes of identity, violence, and reconciliation. The literature of the Maldives, though less internationally visible, retains a deep connection to oral storytelling traditions, reflecting environmental concerns and cultural resilience. Central to the study of South Asian literature are key critical perspectives—how colonialism has shaped narrative strategies and thematic concerns; how translation mediates access and interpretation across linguistic boundaries; how feminist voices articulate resistance to patriarchy; and how indigenous oral traditions inform literary innovation. These literatures, though diverse in form and context, collectively interrogate postcolonial realities, challenge dominant cultural narratives, and affirm the region's pluralistic ethos. They also invite sustained scholarly engagement with issues of gender, nationhood, memory, and hybridity in both historical and contemporary settings. The emergence of digital media, increasing global migration, and the evolving role of vernacular languages in literary production further complicate and enrich the field. Thus, South Asian literature beyond India not only adds to the global literary canon but also asserts the necessity of nuanced, cross-cultural understanding.

1.4 PROMINENT AUTHORS OF SOUTH ASIAN LITERATURE

South Asian literature, often rooted in rich cultural and historical contexts, exhibits a huge variety of themes and styles, reflecting the complex socio-political and cultural landscapes of the region. Exploring the contributions of prominent authors and their seminal works from various South Asian countries, highlights the unique literary traditions and contemporary voices that have shaped and are shaping the literary landscape of this region.

Rabindranath Tagore, a towering figure in Indian and world literature, authored numerous works that reflect his profound humanism and philosophical depth. *Gitanjali* (1910), his Nobel-winning poetry collection, is a spiritual and devotional offering that explores themes of divine love, mortality, and the soul's longing for union with the eternal. In his novel *Gora* (1910), Tagore interrogates religious orthodoxy, casteism, and the nature of true nationalism, ultimately advocating a vision of inclusive humanism. *The Home and the World* (1916) juxtaposes political idealism with personal freedom and critiques the rise of militant nationalism through a complex triangular relationship among its protagonists. *Chokher Bali* (1903), a ground-breaking early feminist work, examines the emotional and social plight of widows in conservative Bengali society, exploring desire, agency, and betrayal. Lastly, *Kabuliwala* (1892), a touching short story, reveals Tagore's sensitivity to human relationships across cultural divides, focusing on a bond between a Pathan fruit-seller and a young Bengali girl, and evoking universal themes of fatherhood, loss, and emotional connection. Together, these works showcase Tagore's literary brilliance and his unwavering commitment to truth, compassion, and the celebration of human dignity. And, R. K. Narayan, also one of India's most celebrated English-language novelists, is best known for his fictional town of Malgudi and his nuanced portrayal of middle-class Indian life. His novel *Swami and Friends* (1935), the first in the Malgudi series, depicts the innocent adventures and gradual maturation of a schoolboy, exploring themes of childhood, colonial education, and identity. *The Bachelor of Arts* (1937) continues this bildungsroman pattern, focusing on a young man's emotional and intellectual growth amidst love, loss, and spiritual awakening. In *The Guide* (1958), perhaps his most acclaimed novel, Narayan narrates the transformation of Raju from a tourist guide to a spiritual figure, reflecting on themes of redemption, illusion, and the ambiguity of morality. *The English Teacher*

(1945), a deeply autobiographical novel, deals with grief, love, and communication with the spiritual world following the death of the protagonist's wife. Lastly, *The Financial Expert* (1952) satirizes economic ambition and moral decay through the story of Margayya, a moneylender whose rise and fall mirror the complex interplay between materialism and ethics. These works, marked by gentle irony, psychological insight, and simple yet elegant prose, reveal Narayan's enduring concern with human frailty, social change, and the quiet dramas of everyday life.

Bapsi Sidhwa, a distinguished Pakistani novelist of Parsi origin, is internationally acclaimed for her powerful portrayals of gender, history, and identity in the context of South Asia's socio-political transformations. Her debut novel *The Crow Eaters* (1978) is a satirical yet affectionate portrayal of the Parsi community in colonial India, focusing on the entrepreneurial Faredoon Junglewalla and exploring themes of family, cultural preservation, and community politics. *The Pakistani Bride* (1983), inspired by a real-life story, addresses the brutal realities of gender oppression and tribal patriarchy through the harrowing journey of Zaitoon, a young orphaned girl forcibly married into a tribal society in the northern frontier, highlighting themes of female agency, violence, and survival. *Ice-Candy-Man* (1988), published in the U.S. as *Cracking India*, is Sidhwa's most celebrated work, narrating the horrors of the 1947 Partition through the innocent eyes of Lenny, a polio-stricken Parsi girl. The novel exposes the communal violence, fractured identities, and loss of innocence brought about by Partition, while also portraying women's suffering during times of political upheaval. In *An American Brat* (1993), Sidhwa explores cultural dislocation and diaspora identity through the experiences of Feroza, a young Parsi girl navigating freedom and assimilation in the U.S., contrasting Eastern conservatism with Western liberalism. Lastly, in *Water* (2006), based on Deepa Mehta's controversial film, Sidhwa confronts the plight of Hindu widows in 1930s colonial India, critiquing religious orthodoxy and gender discrimination. Throughout her oeuvre, Sidhwa weaves history, feminism, and cultural critique into rich narratives that foreground marginalized voices, particularly those of women, within South Asia's volatile historical landscape. And, Mohsin Hamid, another prominent contemporary Pakistani novelist, is celebrated for his incisive explorations of identity, migration, globalization, and socio-political conflict in the post-9/11 world. His debut novel *Moth Smoke* (2000) presents a gritty portrayal of urban decay, class disparity, and moral disintegration in Lahore, through the life of a disgraced banker-turned-drug addict, critiquing the hypocrisies of the elite. *The Reluctant Fundamentalist* (2007), his internationally acclaimed second novel, employs a dramatic monologue to trace the psychological transformation of Changez, a Pakistani man who becomes disillusioned with America after the 9/11 attacks, examining themes of alienation, identity, surveillance, and cultural estrangement. In *How to Get Filthy Rich in Rising Asia* (2013), Hamid adopts the form of a self-help book to satirize capitalist ambition and depict a nameless protagonist's journey from poverty to wealth, reflecting on love, mortality, and the fragility of success in a neoliberal world. *Exit West* (2017), blending realism with speculative fiction, follows a couple fleeing civil war through magical doors, symbolizing migration, borderlessness, and the shared human quest for safety and belonging in an age of displacement. His recent novel *The Last White Man* (2022) reimagines race and transformation in an allegorical setting, exploring existential anxiety, fear of the other, and the potential for empathy. Across these works, Hamid critiques global power structures while affirming the resilience and complexity of human experience.

Tahmima Anam, a distinguished Bangladeshi-British novelist, is best known for her powerful exploration of history, memory, and identity, particularly in the context of the 1971 Bangladesh Liberation War and its aftermath. Her acclaimed debut novel *A Golden Age* (2007) presents the war through the eyes of Rehana Haque, a widowed mother whose personal sacrifices reflect the national struggle, blending domestic narratives with political upheaval. The novel, part of the Bengal Trilogy, is followed by *The Good Muslim* (2011), which examines post-war

disillusionment and religious radicalism through the ideological divide between siblings. *The Bones of Grace* (2016), the final instalment, explores themes of exile, belonging, and global inequality, through a deeply personal love story and the ethical dilemmas surrounding shipbreaking in Bangladesh. Her recent novel *The Startup Wife* (2021) shifts to a satirical tone, critiquing tech culture, gender roles, and modern relationships. Anam's works are celebrated for their emotional depth, historical consciousness, and feminist insight. Humayun Ahmed, also one of the most beloved and influential writers in modern Bangladeshi literature, left a profound mark through his novels, short stories, plays, and films that resonated deeply with readers across generations. Blending realism with elements of magical realism and philosophical introspection, Ahmed's works captured the complexities of middle-class urban life, emotional intimacy, and existential dilemmas with remarkable simplicity and empathy. His debut novel *Nondito Noroke* (In Blissful Hell, 1972) depicted a dysfunctional yet emotionally rich family, establishing his reputation for psychological realism. His iconic characters, especially Himu—an eccentric wanderer rejecting materialism—and Misir Ali—a rationalist psychologist intrigued by the supernatural—became cultural symbols, reflecting two contrasting worldviews : mystical detachment and scientific inquiry. Novels like *Shonkhonil Karagar*, *Josna o Jononir Golpo,* and *Aguner Poroshmoni* deal with themes of war, love, loss, and national identity, particularly his sensitive portrayals of the 1971 Liberation War. Ahmed's lucid prose, emotional depth, and ability to portray ordinary lives with extraordinary poignancy made him a literary phenomenon, endearing him to millions and earning him prestigious awards such as the Bangla Academy Award and the Ekushey Padak. His contributions to television and cinema further solidified his role as a cultural architect of contemporary Bangladesh.

Michael Ondaatje, the Sri Lankan-born Canadian writer, is widely acclaimed for his lyrical prose, genre-defying narratives, and profound exploration of identity, memory, history, and displacement. Best known for his Booker Prize-winning novel *The English Patient* (1992), Ondaatje weaves a fragmented, poetic narrative of four war-torn individuals in an Italian villa during World War II, exploring themes of love, betrayal, loss, and the elusive nature of truth. His earlier semi-autobiographical work, *Running in the Family* (1982), blends memoir, fiction, and travel writing to recreate his Sri Lankan childhood and ancestral past, addressing themes of exile, family mythology, and cultural hybridity. In *In the Skin of a Lion* (1987), Ondaatje focuses on immigrant labourers in early 20th-century Toronto, foregrounding voices historically marginalized in national narratives and thematizing construction, both literal and metaphorical, of identity and urban history. *Anil's Ghost* (2000), set in war-torn Sri Lanka, follows a forensic anthropologist investigating state violence and personal trauma, reflecting on memory, justice, and the cost of civil conflict. His recent novel *Warlight* (2018) continues his interest in fragmented post-war memory, espionage, and coming-of-age, narrated by a young boy uncovering secrets of his mother's wartime life. Throughout his oeuvre, Ondaatje defies linear storytelling, employing a poetic sensibility to probe the intricacies of human experience across geographies and histories. And, Romesh Gunesekera, another Sri Lankan-born British novelist, is renowned for his evocative prose and poignant explorations of memory, exile, and postcolonial identity. His debut collection *Monkfish Moon* (1992) captures the tensions of civil unrest and diasporic longing, while his Booker Prize-shortlisted novel *Reef* (1994) portrays a young servant's coming-of-age amid political turmoil in Sri Lanka. *The Sandglass* (1998) and *Heaven's Edge* (2002) further explore themes of displacement, personal loss, and the fragility of paradise. Gunesekera's works are marked by lyrical precision and emotional restraint, offering a nuanced reflection on cultural hybridity, migration, and the enduring search for belonging.

Samrat Upadhyay, the first Nepali writer in English to gain international recognition, is acclaimed for his realistic portrayals of urban Nepali life, grappling with tradition, modernity, and moral ambiguity. His debut short story collection *Arresting God in Kathmandu* (2001), which won the Whiting Writers' Award, presents vivid vignettes of Kathmandu's middle-class society,

exploring themes such as marital tension, spiritual conflict, and societal expectation. His novel *The Guru of Love* (2003) delves into sexual desire and the constraints of family obligation in a changing Nepal. Upadhyay's fiction, including *Buddha's Orphans* (2010) and *The City Son* (2014), often juxtaposes the personal with the political, addressing Nepal's socio-political upheavals through deeply intimate human experiences. His style is restrained yet emotionally potent, blending psychological insight with subtle satire. **And, Manjushree Thapa**, another prominent Nepali author and translator, is known for her literary activism and keen engagement with Nepal's political and cultural realities. Her debut novel *The Tutor of History* (2001) presents a richly layered depiction of democratic aspirations in rural Nepal, while her memoir *Forget Kathmandu : An Elegy for Democracy* (2005) offers a deeply personal, critical reflection on Nepal's monarchy, civil war, and democratic struggles. A passionate advocate for human rights and gender equity, Thapa's writings—fiction and nonfiction—foreground themes of civic responsibility, historical memory, and the tensions of nation-building.

Kunzang Choden, Bhutan's first female novelist writing in English, is celebrated for preserving and presenting Bhutanese culture, spirituality, and oral traditions through fiction. Her acclaimed novel *The Circle of Karma* (2005) follows the journey of Tsomo, a Bhutanese woman who defies societal norms and embarks on a spiritual and physical quest for self-realization, highlighting themes of gender, identity, and resilience. Deeply rooted in Buddhist philosophy, Choden's works such as *Tales in Colour* and *Dawa : The Story of a Stray Dog* offer rich portrayals of Bhutanese life, bridging tradition and modernity. Her writing is noted for its lyrical clarity, cultural authenticity, and quiet feminist strength.

Abdul Azeez, a prominent literary figure from the Maldives, is widely regarded as a pioneer in modern Maldivian literature. Writing primarily in Dhivehi, his works reflect deep engagement with Maldivian history, culture, and socio-political change. As a novelist, poet, and essayist, Azeez is known for blending traditional oral storytelling with contemporary themes, often addressing issues such as colonialism, nationalism, identity, and moral decline. His contributions to the development of literary criticism and cultural discourse in the Maldives have been influential in shaping modern Maldivian intellectual life. Azeez's work remains central to the nation's evolving literary and cultural consciousness.

South Asian literature, with its myriad voices and narratives, offers a window into the diverse cultures, histories, and experiences of the region. From the philosophical musings of Tagore to the contemporary reflections of Mohsin Hamid, these authors and their works not only represent the literary wealth of their respective nations but also contribute significantly to the global literary canon. Future studies in this field may further explore the interplay between traditional literary forms and modern narrative techniques, the representation of marginalized voices, and the impact of socio-political changes on literary expressions. These themes not only deepen our understanding of South Asian literature but also encourage a more nuanced appreciation of its role in shaping and reflecting the region's collective consciousness.

1.5 LET US SUM UP

South Asian literature, encompassing the literary traditions of India, Pakistan, Bangladesh, Nepal, Sri Lanka, Bhutan, and the Maldives, is characterized by remarkable linguistic and thematic diversity. Its roots trace back to ancient Sanskrit texts like the *Vedas* and epics such as the *Ramayana* and *Mahabharata*, foundational works influencing the region's culture and philosophy. The coexistence of multiple languages—including Hindi, Urdu, Bengali, Tamil, and English—contributes to its rich literary heritage. In the colonial and postcolonial eras, themes of nationalism, identity, colonialism, and social reform became prominent, highlighted by landmark works such as Tagore's *Gitanjali*, Rushdie's *Midnight's Children*, and Roy's *The God of Small Things*.

Historically, South Asia's cultural and political development witnessed transformative phases—from the urban sophistication of the Indus Valley Civilization and the philosophical depth of the Vedic era to imperial grandeur under the Mauryan and Gupta empires. Islamic rule, notably the Mughal Empire, further enriched the region culturally. British colonization dramatically altered its socio-political fabric, culminating in independence and the traumatic Partition of 1947, whose legacy continues to influence literary narratives. Modern South Asian literature reflects this complex history, exploring displacement, diasporic identity, gender issues, and socio-political struggles, forming an integral part of global literary discourse and offering critical insights into the region's dynamic cultures and evolving identities.

1.6 QUESTIONS

1. How have ancient texts such as the *Vedas*, *Ramayana*, and *Mahabharata* influenced the development of South Asian literature and culture?
2. What impact did British colonialism have on South Asian literature, and how did it shape themes explored by authors during and after colonial rule?
3. Discuss the significance of linguistic diversity in South Asian literature. How has the coexistence of multiple languages enriched literary traditions in the region?
4. Identify and analyse key themes reflected in landmark literary works such as Tagore's *Gitanjali*, Rushdie's *Midnight's Children*, and Roy's *The God of Small Things*.
5. Examine how the Partition of 1947 has influenced South Asian literature, particularly in narratives of displacement, identity, and communal tensions.

1.7 FURTHER READINGS

- *The Argumentative Indian : Writings on Indian History, Culture and Identity* by Amartya Sen (2005)
- *India After Gandhi : The History of the World's Largest Democracy* by Ramachandra Guha (2007)
- *The Sole Spokesman : Jinnah, the Muslim League, and the Demand for Pakistan* by Ayesha Jalal (1985)
- *A History of India* by Romila Thapar (1966)
- *Imaginary Homelands : Essays and Criticism 1981–1991* by Salman Rushdie (1991)

UNIT-2 AGHA SHAHID ALI : "POST CARD FROM KASHMIR"

Structure

2.0 Objective

2.1 Introduction

2.2 Life of Agha Shahid Ali

2.3 Works of Agha Shahid Ali

2.4 Post Card From Kashmir

2.4.1 Analysis

2.5 Major Themes and Concerns

2.6 Critical Reception of Agha Shahid Ali as a Modern Indian Poet

2.7 Let Us Sum Up

2.8 Questions

2.9 Further Readings

2.0 OBJECTIVE

The objective of studying Agha Shahid Ali's poem "Postcard from Kashmir" in postgraduate courses in India is to explore the complex interplay of nostalgia, displacement, and the longing for a lost homeland. This poem serves as a poignant reflection on the socio-political issues surrounding Kashmir, offering students insight into the nuanced ways in which poetry can capture personal and collective experiences. By engaging with Ali's work, students critically examine themes of identity, memory, and the impact of political conflict on individual lives, fostering a deeper understanding of the cultural and historical contexts that shape South Asian literature.

2.1 INTRODUCTION

Agha Shahid Ali (1949-2001) was a distinguished Kashmiri-American poet, recognized for his eloquent expression of exile, loss, and cultural dislocation. Born in New Delhi, India, and raised in Kashmir, he moved to the United States in the 1970s for higher education. Ali earned a Ph.D. in English from Pennsylvania State University and an MFA from the University of Arizona. His poetry is acclaimed for its lyrical beauty and its nuanced exploration of the themes of identity, displacement, and longing. Ali's work is deeply influenced by traditional Urdu forms, especially the ghazal, which he skilfully adapted into English. His notable collections include *Rooms Are Never Finished* (2001), a finalist for the National Book Award, and *The Half-Inch Himalayas* (1987). Ali's contribution to literature extends beyond his poetry; he was also a revered educator, teaching at various institutions including the University of Utah and the University of Massachusetts Amherst. His legacy endures in the eloquent and emotionally resonant voice that speaks from his poetry, bridging Eastern and Western literary traditions.

2.2 LIFE OF AGHA SHAHID ALI

Agha Shahid Ali, an eminent figure in contemporary poetry, was born on February 4, 1949, in New Delhi, India, and raised in the idyllic surroundings of Kashmir, a region often celebrated in his works for its breath-taking landscapes and haunting political strife. He was a prominent Kashmiri-American poet, celebrated for his exploration of the cultural and political landscapes of

Kashmir as well as his profound contributions to the ghazal form in English poetry. His life and work reflect a rich canvas of experiences, influences, and literary mastery that have significantly impacted modern poetry.

Shahid (as he was often known) hailed from a distinguished and educated family in Kashmir. His father, Agha Ashraf Ali, was an esteemed educator, and his mother, Begum Zaffar Ali, was a political activist and educationist. This intellectual and politically conscious environment played a pivotal role in shaping his sensibilities and literary aspirations. Shahid's early education took place in Srinagar, Kashmir, and he later pursued higher studies at the University of Kashmir and the University of Delhi. In 1975, Agha Shahid Ali moved to the United States to pursue his Master of Fine Arts (MFA) degree at the University of Arizona in Tucson. Later, he earned a PhD in English from Pennsylvania State University. These years were crucial in expanding his literary horizons and honing his craft as a poet. As an educator, Shahid taught at various institutions, including the University of Utah, where he was a beloved teacher and mentor. He was instrumental in fostering a love for poetry and creative writing among his students, many of whom went on to become notable writers themselves.

Agha Shahid Ali's life was also marked by personal struggles, particularly his battle with brain cancer, which eventually led to his untimely death on December 8, 2001. His passing was a significant loss to the literary world, but his work continues to live on, influencing and inspiring new generations of poets and readers. In his poetry, Shahid often grappled with themes of loss, exile, and longing, reflecting both his personal experiences and the broader political and cultural contexts of his time. His work is a poignant exploration of identity, belonging, and the unbreakable ties to one's homeland.

Agha Shahid Ali's contribution to literature extends beyond his innovative use of form and his lyrical prowess. His works offer a critical lens on the political turmoil of Kashmir, the complexities of diasporic identity, and the universal themes of love and loss. Scholars often analyse his work through various lenses, including postcolonial theory, diaspora studies, and translation studies, revealing the multi-layered richness of his poetry.

2.3 WORKS OF AGHA SHAHID ALI

Agha Shahid Ali's literary oeuvre spans a remarkable body of poetic compositions and significant contributions as a translator and editor. His creative journey in poetry began with the publication of *Bone Sculpture* in 1972, a collection that already hinted at his lyricism and depth. This was followed by *In Memory of Begum Akhtar and Other Poems* in 1979, wherein he paid homage to the iconic ghazal singer and began to explore the elegiac tones that would become a signature of his later work. His mature voice emerged fully in *The Half-Inch Himalayas* (1987), a landmark volume that established him as a vital voice in Indian English poetry and the diasporic literary landscape. That same year, he also published *A Walk Through the Yellow Pages*, reflecting his versatile engagement with the everyday and the metaphysical. Continuing his journey through themes of memory, loss, and exile, Ali brought forth *A Nostalgist's Map of America* in 1991, a deeply introspective collection mapping personal and cultural dislocation. His selected works were compiled in *The Beloved Witness : Selected Poems* in 1992, offering readers a panoramic view of his poetic concerns up to that point.

Ali's poetic reputation was significantly consolidated with *The Country Without a Post Office* in 1997, a haunting meditation on the political turmoil in Kashmir, blending personal grief with collective tragedy. His penultimate collection, *Rooms Are Never Finished* (2001), was a finalist for the National Book Award and deepened his meditations on mortality, diaspora, and the fragmented self. After his passing, *Call Me Ishmael Tonight : A Book of Ghazals* was published in

2003, a testament to his mastery of the ghazal form in English and his continuing dialogue with both Eastern and Western literary traditions. In addition to his original poetic contributions, Agha Shahid Ali played a vital role in translation and editorial work. He translated *The Rebel's Silhouette : Selected Poems by Faiz Ahmed Faiz* in 1992, bringing the Urdu revolutionary poet's works into English with lyrical fidelity and interpretive sensitivity. His editorial acumen was also evident in *Ravishing Disunities : Real Ghazals in English* (2000), a pioneering anthology that showcased the adaptability of the ghazal form in the English language and underscored Ali's commitment to cross-cultural poetic exchange. Through these works, Ali not only shaped the contours of contemporary poetry but also enriched the intercultural aesthetics of modern literature.

2.4 "POST CARD FROM KASHMIR"

Agha Shahid Ali's poem "Postcard from Kashmir" is a profound and evocative piece of literature that encapsulates the complex emotions and realities of the Kashmiri diaspora. This poem, published in 1987 in the collection titled *The Half-Inch Himalayas*, reflects Ali's own experiences and sentiments as a Kashmiri living in the United States. The poem is not only a personal narrative but also a representation of the collective Kashmiri experience, particularly in the context of the political turmoil and conflict that have plagued the region. To understand "Postcard from Kashmir," it is essential to delve into the historical and political context of Kashmir. The region has been a site of geopolitical tension, primarily between India and Pakistan, since the partition of British India in 1947. This political unrest has led to several wars, ongoing military conflicts, and a deeply contentious atmosphere. The impact of this turmoil on the people of Kashmir has been profound, with issues of displacement, loss of home, and a longing for peace being recurrent themes in their narratives.

(TEXT)

Kashmir shrinks into my mailbox,
my home a neat four by six inches.
I always loved neatness. Now I hold
the half-inch Himalayas in my hand.

This is home. And this the closest
I'll ever be to home. When I return,
the colors won't be so brilliant,
the Jhelum's waters so clean,
so ultramarine. My love
so overexposed.

And my memory will be a little
out of focus, in it
a giant negative, black
and white, still undeveloped.

2.4.1 Analysis

"Postcard from Kashmir" is remarkable for its brevity and poignant imagery. The poem is structured as a single stanza, encapsulating the essence of a postcard – brief yet loaded with meaning. The imagery used in the poem is vivid and evocative, painting a picture of the Kashmir that Shahid Ali remembers and longs for. The opening lines, "Kashmir shrinks into my mailbox, my home a neat four by six inches," immediately introduce the themes of reduction and loss. The physical shrinking of Kashmir into a postcard size is symbolic of the emotional and psychological reduction of Ali's homeland in his memory and experience. This metaphor also speaks to the way distant memories can simplify complex realities, reducing them to idealized images. The use of the word "neat" is particularly poignant, hinting at the oversimplification of complex realities. The Kashmir in Shahid Ali's memory and on the postcard is neat and unblemished, contrasting sharply with the actual turmoil and conflict-ridden state of the region. The poem progresses to describe the imagery on the postcard– the Dal Lake, the houseboats, the shikaras. These are iconic symbols of Kashmir's beauty, often featured in tourist brochures and postcards. However, Shahid Ali's mention of these symbols is not merely nostalgic; it is also an acknowledgment of the outsider's gaze that often romanticizes Kashmir without understanding its deeper issues.

Ali's use of the line "I always loved neatness" further delves into the theme of memory and its selective nature. The neatness he refers to can be seen as a metaphor for the selective and often sanitized memories that people hold onto, especially when they are far from the reality of their homeland.

The final lines of the poem, "Now I hold the half-inch Himalayas in my hand, this is home. And this is the closest/ I'll ever be to home. When I return,/ the colors won't be so brilliant,/ the Jhelum's waters so clean,/ so ultramarine. My love/ so overexposed" capture the essence of exile and lost home. The "half-inch Himalayas" symbolizes the diminished, almost trivialized version of his homeland that Ali holds in his memory and in his hand. The acknowledgment that this postcard is the closest he will ever be to home is a poignant comment on the permanent sense of loss and displacement experienced by exiles. The poem concludes with a realistic, almost resigned acknowledgment that the actual Kashmir, if ever revisited, will not match the idealized version in his memory. The brilliance of colours, the purity of the Jhelum River, and the innocence in his loved ones are all aspects that have likely been altered by the ongoing conflict and the passage of time.

"Postcard from Kashmir" is more than a nostalgic recollection; it is a commentary on the nature of memory, the pain of exile, and the longing for a lost home. Ali's poem challenges the reader to consider the realities behind the idyllic images often portrayed in media and tourist brochures. It speaks to the heart of the Kashmiri experience – a blend of beauty and pain, loss and memory. The poem also raises critical questions about the representation of conflict zones and the experiences of those who are displaced from such areas. Ali's work urges readers to look beyond the surface and to understand the deep emotional and psychological impacts of political conflict on individuals and communities. Ultimately, Agha Shahid Ali's "Postcard from Kashmir" is a powerful literary piece that encapsulates the complexities of memory, exile, and longing. Through its vivid imagery and poignant metaphors, the poem offers a deeply personal yet universally resonant perspective on the experience of displacement and the longing for a lost home.

2.5 MAJOR THEMES AND CONCERNS

Agha Shahid Ali's poem 'Postcard from Kashmir,' published in his acclaimed collection *The Half-Inch Himalayas* (1987), encapsulates a vivid portrayal of the Kashmiri diaspora, identity, and nostalgia. Ali, a Kashmiri-American poet, is renowned for his eloquent verse that often intertwines personal longing with larger political realities, and this poem is a quintessential example of his

lyrical prowess. The poem commences with the speaker receiving a postcard of Kashmir, a symbolic representation of the poet's homeland. This postcard, however, is emblematic of a far more complex and poignant reality. It represents a Kashmir reduced to a mere image, a static and idealized snapshot that contrasts sharply with the dynamic and often turbulent reality of the region. This dichotomy between image and reality is a central theme in the poem, reflecting the broader disconnect between the Kashmiri diaspora's nostalgic memories and the ongoing political strife in their homeland.

Ali adeptly weaves the theme of nostalgia throughout the poem. The idyllic image on the postcard triggers a longing for a lost homeland, a place that remains pristine and unaltered in the memory of the speaker. This nostalgia, however, is tinged with the pain of displacement and the realization that the homeland they yearn for has irrevocably changed. The imagery of Kashmir presented in the postcard is a stark contrast to the conflict-ridden reality of the region, underscoring the dissonance between memory and present experience. The poem also delves into the themes of identity and belonging. The speaker's relationship with Kashmir is complex– it is a place of origin, yet the distance (both physical and metaphorical) has created a sense of alienation. The postcard becomes a symbol of this fractured identity, a reminder of roots that are both deeply ingrained and painfully distant.

Furthermore, 'Postcard from Kashmir' subtly addresses the political conflict in Kashmir, albeit through the lens of personal experience rather than overt political commentary. The serene image on the postcard is a stark contradiction to the turmoil and suffering experienced by those living in the midst of the conflict. This juxtaposition serves as a powerful commentary on the often oversimplified and romanticized perceptions of conflict zones.

2.6 CRITICAL RECEPTION OF AGHA SHAHID ALI AS A MODERN INDIAN POET

Agha Shahid Ali, one of the most significant figures in modern Indian poetry in English, has received sustained critical attention for his distinct poetic voice that straddles the boundaries of East and West, tradition and modernity, personal memory and historical trauma. His critical reception, particularly as documented in *Modern Indian Poetry in English* by Bruce King, marks him as a cosmopolitan and diasporic poet whose engagement with form and subject matter has placed him at the forefront of late 20th-century Indian English poetry. King positions Agha Shahid Ali within a new generation of poets that came to prominence in the 1980s and 1990s—poets who were more confident in their use of English and less concerned with national identity or postcolonial anxiety. Unlike earlier Indian poets in English such as Nissim Ezekiel or Kamala Das, who often wrote in reaction to colonial legacies and were rooted in the Indian urban middle class, Ali belonged to a more international, transnational group of writers. He was particularly shaped by the experiences of migration, the global university system, and literary traditions beyond the Indian subcontinent, including American poetry, the European modernists, and Persian-Urdu literary heritage .

Critics have admired Shahid Ali's ability to blend classical forms such as the ghazal with modern English idioms, thereby reviving a form that had been largely confined to Urdu and Persian poetic traditions. His anthology *Call Me Ishmael Tonight : A Book of Ghazals* (2003), which posthumously collected his English-language ghazals, was particularly celebrated for its formal precision and emotive depth. Bruce King remarks that Shahid Ali's use of the ghazal is not a mere cultural artifact but a genuine aesthetic and emotional tool, deployed to explore themes of exile, longing, and loss. Ali's *The Beloved Witness : Selected Poems* and *The Country Without a Post Office* were widely praised for their lyrical intensity and political poignancy. The latter, in particular, established his reputation as a poet of Kashmir—a homeland rendered both literal and metaphorical through the imagery of loss and silence. King notes that his poetry about Kashmir transformed the

region into a symbol of both personal exile and collective suffering, a space haunted by violence, erasure, and the yearning for return. This focus allowed critics to frame him as a poet of exile and displacement, comparable in some respects to writers such as Derek Walcott or Mahmoud Darwish.

The reception of Agha Shahid Ali has also emphasized his formal versatility and linguistic finesse. His command over English, his ability to weave in Urdu and Persian idioms, and his facility with a range of poetic forms—from free verse to villanelles and sestinas—have earned him acclaim across critical circles. Bruce King asserts that Ali's poems often transcend boundaries of genre and geography, locating themselves in a poetic tradition that is simultaneously Kashmiri, Indian, American, and transnational. His work appeals to a global readership without losing the specificity of his cultural and political concerns. Bruce King also contextualizes Ali as part of a larger shift in Indian English poetry, where poets began to embrace their cosmopolitanism rather than treat English as a colonizer's tongue. Ali's work exemplifies this shift, showing no anxiety about writing in English and instead using it as a vehicle to express complex themes of identity, dislocation, and historical memory. His poetry is thus both aesthetically rich and politically resonant, appealing to readers and critics across cultures.

2.7 LET US SUM UP

Agha Shahid Ali (1949–2001) was an influential Kashmiri-American poet celebrated for eloquently expressing themes of exile, identity, and cultural dislocation. His poetry uniquely merges Eastern and Western literary traditions, prominently adapting the traditional Urdu ghazal form into English. Key works include *Rooms Are Never Finished* (2001), a National Book Award finalist, and *The Country Without a Post Office* (1997), which poignantly addresses Kashmir's political turmoil. Ali was also an esteemed educator, teaching at institutions like the University of Utah and the University of Massachusetts Amherst. His poem "Postcard from Kashmir" from *The Half-Inch Himalayas* (1987) profoundly encapsulates diaspora experiences, reflecting on memory, loss, and the idealization of homeland amid political conflict. Ali's literary legacy is distinguished by his ability to convey universal emotions through personal and culturally specific lenses, bridging divides between Eastern and Western poetry, and profoundly influencing contemporary literature through his innovative poetic forms and heartfelt explorations of displacement and belonging.

2.8 QUESTIONS

1. How does Agha Shahid Ali's personal experience of displacement influence the recurring themes in his poetry, particularly exile, identity, and nostalgia?
2. In what ways did Agha Shahid Ali bridge Eastern and Western poetic traditions, and how effectively did he adapt the Urdu ghazal into English poetry?
3. Discuss the symbolic significance of the poem "Postcard from Kashmir." How does the poet use imagery to reflect the tension between idealized memories and the political realities of Kashmir?
4. Evaluate Agha Shahid Ali's contribution to contemporary diasporic literature. How has his poetry impacted the understanding of cultural dislocation and identity among diasporic communities?
5. What critical approaches (such as postcolonial theory or diaspora studies) could be effectively used to analyse Ali's poetry, and what insights might these frameworks offer into his representation of Kashmir's socio-political context?

2.9 FURTHER READINGS

- *The Veiled Suite : The Collected Poems* by Agha Shahid Ali (W. W. Norton & Company, 2009).
- *A Map of Longings : The Life and Works of Agha Shahid Ali* by Manan Kapoor (Vintage Books, Penguin Random House, 2021).
- *Mad Heart Be Brave : Essays on the Poetry of Agha Shahid* Ali edited by Kazim Ali (University of Michigan Press, 2017).
- *Postcolonial Poetry in English* by Rajeev S. Patke (Oxford University Press, 2006).
- *Kashmir : Exposing the Myth Behind the Narrative* by Khalid Bashir Ahmad (SAGE Publications, 2017).
- *Modern Indian Poetry in English* by Bruce King (Oxford University Press, Rev. ed., 2006).

UNIT-3 KISHWAR NAHEED : "I AM NOT THAT WOMAN"

Structure

3.0 Objective

3.1 Introduction

3.2 Introduction to the Poet : Kishwar Naheed

3.3 Poem Analysis

3.3.1 Title Analysis

3.3.2 Form and Structure

3.3.3 Thematic Analysis

3.3.4 Literary Devices

3.4 Comparative Study

3.5 Theoretical Perspectives

3.6 Let Us Sum Up

3.7 Questions

3.8 Further Readings and Resources

3.0 OBJECTIVES

The primary aim of this study is to provide in-depth analysis and comprehensive understanding of Kishwar Naheed's poem "I Am Not That Woman". This resource is meticulously designed to enhance the reader's appreciation of Naheed's significant contributions to feminist literature, particularly in the South Asian context. By delving into the themes and literary techniques employed by Naheed, this material serves as a detailed guide to understanding the poet's method of challenging traditional patriarchal norms and expressing the struggles and resilience of women.

3.1 INTRODUCTION

"I Am Not That Woman" by Kishwar Naheed is a seminal work in contemporary feminist literature, significantly impacting the discourse within South Asian feminism. Born in 1940 in India, Naheed moved to Pakistan post-partition and has since been a stalwart voice for women's rights through her Urdu poetry. Her work critically addresses the multifaceted oppressions women endure in patriarchal societies and celebrates the resilience of women who resist these constraints. This poem stands as a declaration of independence from the traditional roles prescribed to women, voicing a strong demand for recognition beyond societal expectations. It engages with themes of identity, autonomy, and resistance, making a powerful statement against gender-based discrimination and for women's emancipation. Through vivid literary techniques like metaphor, imagery, and repetition, Naheed enhances the poem's emotional depth, making her message resonate universally, despite its specific cultural references.

This poem also develops a critical perspective on feminist literature, considering how it can influence social change and personal expression. This material aims to not only educate but also inspire critical thinking about the role of literary arts in championing gender equality and challenging societal norms. Through engaging with Naheed's work, students are expected to

articulate insightful connections between the poem and ongoing feminist dialogues, fostering an appreciation of poetry as a tool for both reflecting and shaping the world around them.

3.2 INTRODUCTION TO THE POET : KISHWAR NAHEED

Kishwar Naheed, born in 1940 in Bulandshahr, India, is a renowned Urdu poet and an iconic feminist voice from Pakistan. Her move to Pakistan after the 1947 partition significantly influenced her literary expressions. Naheed is celebrated not only for the lyrical beauty of her poetry but also for her incisive critique of societal norms that subjugate women. Her work champions the liberation of women, positioning her as a symbol of resistance and empowerment within South Asian feminist discourse. Educated in Urdu literature, Naheed found her voice through her poetry, articulating issues of gender and social injustice. Her career took a pivotal turn during her tenure at Radio Pakistan in the early 1960s, which coincided with the maturation of her poetic expression. Her themes frequently explore the inner lives of women, their dreams, struggles, and resilience against patriarchal constraints. Naheed's literary repertoire includes numerous celebrated collections. Her debut, "Lab-e-Goya", published in 1968, garnered widespread acclaim. Another significant work, "We Sinful Women", translated into English by Rukhsana Ahmad, highlights the challenges women face in a patriarchal society and is noted for its bold exploration of themes like love, oppression, and liberation.

Her poetry, known for its vivid imagery and bold metaphors, delves deeply into emotional and intellectual realms, often reflecting her personal experiences and the broader socio-political context of her times. Naheed's ability to confront injustices through her lucid and poignant verse has garnered her both national and international accolades, including Pakistan's prestigious Sitara-i-Imtiaz and the UNESCO Prize for Children's and Young People's Literature in the Service of Tolerance in 1993. Kishwar Naheed remains a vital voice in Urdu poetry and gender discourse in South Asia. Her works, transcending geographical and cultural boundaries, continue to inspire and provoke thought about human rights and women's autonomy, empowering future generations to explore their identities and assert their places in literature and society.

3.3. POEM ANALYSIS (STANZA-WISE)

Kishwar Naheed's poem "I Am Not That Woman" is a powerful feminist declaration that reflects the struggles of women under patriarchal oppression. It emerges from the personal experiences of the poet, who has witnessed and resisted the subjugation of women in Pakistan and broader South Asian society. Written in a tone of defiance, the poem critiques the social, economic, and emotional oppression of women, demanding an end to the restrictive gender roles imposed by tradition. Below is a detailed analysis of the poem with a focus on the poem's themes, style, and structure.

Stanza-wise Explanation

Stanza-1

I am not that woman

Selling you socks and shoes!

Remember me, I am the one you hid

In your walls of stone, while you roamed

Free as the breeze, not knowing

That my voice cannot be smothered by stones.

The poem commences with the speaker distancing herself from the commercialized image of women, asserting she is not akin to the woman depicted in advertisements selling footwear and garments. She identifies instead with women who have been historically oppressed, concealed behind literal and metaphorical stone barriers, even as men enjoyed unfettered freedom. Yet, the speaker reveals that these confines could not suppress her voice. The stanza critiques male hypocrisy : men admire women in advertisements yet impose strictures on the women within their own households, treating them as paragons of virtue to be shielded from the public gaze, while simultaneously disparaging actresses as morally inferior. This duplicity extends to their personal liberties contrasted with the restrictions placed on women, ostensibly for their protection. The poet confronts this hypocrisy with a declaration of resilience, stating that despite attempts to silence her through confinement, her voice remains indomitable, continuing to challenge these impositions and advocate for her autonomy.

Stanza-2

I am the one you crushed

With the weight of custom and tradition

Not knowing

That light cannot be hidden in darkness.

Remember me,

I am the one in whose lap

You picked flowers

And planted thorns and embers

Not knowing

That chains cannot smother my fragrance

Subsequently, the poet identifies herself as the woman oppressed by the burdensome weight of customs and traditions, tools utilized by men to inflict suffering on women. However, she asserts that enlightenment cannot be obscured by obscurity, symbolizing that her knowledge, abilities, and self-assurance are impervious to suppression by patriarchal traditions. She accuses men of exploiting her virtues while compensating her with hardships, depicted through the metaphor of taking flowers from her and replacing them with thorns and embers. This imagery highlights the exploitation and reciprocal detriment she endures. The poet further contends that her essence remains uncontainable, akin to the way a flower's scent cannot be constrained by chains. This assertion serves as a declaration of her indomitable spirit and intrinsic value, which defy the restraints imposed by societal customs.

Stanza-3

I am the woman

Whom you bought and sold

In the name of my own chastity

Not knowing

That I can walk on water

When I am drowning.

The poet further reveals that she has been commodified, traded in transactions disguised as marital arrangements—bought and sold under the guise of preserving her purity. This reference to the practice of arranged marriages and dowry underscores a grim reality where daughters are bartered to affluent and esteemed families, ostensibly to safeguard their chastity. This justification, however, neglects the actual desires and emotions of the women involved. She criticizes this custom, highlighting that the true sentiments of the woman being married are wholly disregarded. The poet challenges this narrative by asserting her resilience, metaphorically claiming she has the capability to 'walk on water' even as she seems to be sinking. This imagery conveys her profound strength and the miraculous nature of her perseverance amidst oppressive circumstances.

Stanza-4

I am the one you married off

To get rid of a burden

Not knowing

That a nation of captive minds

Cannot be free.

In this stanza, the poet identifies herself as a woman hastily married off to lessen her family's perceived burden. This depiction critiques the arranged marriage tradition, where parents view their daughter not as a cherished child but as a liability to be expeditiously cleared. They rush to marry her off, believing they have fulfilled their obligations by removing a burden, without considering her wishes in the matter. The poet starkly cautions that a society rife with such repressive attitudes can never truly be free. This statement suggests that although the parents might feel liberated after marrying off their daughter, they remain confined by their own limited perspectives. The broader implication is that a nation populated by individuals with such narrow mindsets cannot achieve genuine independence or prosperity, despite being politically free from colonial rule. Here, the poet subtly critiques the superficial nature of freedom experienced in the subcontinent following the departure of the British, linking individual familial practices to broader national stagnation.

Stanza-5

I am the commodity you traded in,

My chastity, my motherhood, my loyalty.

Now it is time for me to flower free.

The woman on that poster, half-naked, selling socks and shoes—

No, no, I am not that woman!

In the final stanza, the poet characterizes herself as a commodity, traded on the virtues of chastity, motherhood, and loyalty—all ideals forcefully imposed by a patriarchal society. She critiques how these roles are expected of her : chastity is mandated, motherhood coerced, and loyalty demanded, without any consideration for her own aspirations. This commodification is purportedly to uphold her status as a 'good and cultured' woman within the community. Often, women are pressured to remain devoted to their husbands for life and pushed into motherhood at a young age against their wishes, the only roles deemed respectable being those of a loyal wife and mother. Such norms suppress women's individuality, reducing them to mere bearers of prescribed traits. Declaring her emancipation from these confines, the poet proclaims it is now her time to 'flower free.' She

envisions herself advancing with confidence, blooming unfettered by societal expectations, akin to a flower in its natural state.

The poem concludes with a satirical critique of male hypocrisy, as she contrasts her own exploited image with that of the sexualized woman in advertisements, used to sell mundane products like socks and shoes. This juxtaposition underscores the pervasive objectification and double standards women face, highlighting the poet's rejection of such dehumanizing roles.

3.3.1 Title Analysis

The poem "I Am Not That Woman" by Kishwar Naheed uses its title not only as a refrain but as a profound declaration of defiance and self-assertion against patriarchal impositions. This title encapsulates the essence of Naheed's poetry, echoing throughout the verses as a mantra of resistance and identity reclaiming. Each invocation of "I Am Not That Woman" within the poem punctuates a rejection of the restrictive roles and stereotypes patriarchy crafts for women—be it the submissive wife, the commercial object, or the emblem of chastity and sexual objectification.

This emphatic declaration serves multiple functions. Primarily, it is a rejection of identities foisted upon women by a society that seeks to define them through a narrow lens of utility and decorum. Naheed's repetitive disavowal of these imposed roles highlights a crucial feminist critique—women are more than the sum of societal expectations. The title thus becomes a tool for women to reclaim their identity, offering a path beyond the confining roles of marriage, motherhood, and subservience. Moreover, the title and its recurrent use in the poem amplify the theme of resistance against both traditional and contemporary forms of women's oppression. Whether through the metaphorical "walls of stone" or the blatant commodification in advertisements, each chorus of "I Am Not That Woman" underscores a refusal to be boxed into patriarchal constructs. This defiance is not just against overt control but also against subtler, more insidious forms of commodification, like those seen in consumer culture where women's bodies are used to market products.

Additionally, the poem and its title critique both historical and modern-day exploitation of women. Through Naheed's verse, we see how patriarchal systems commodify women as objects of honour, economic exchange, or marketing tools. The title acts as a bridge linking these dual exploitations, underscoring a continuity of control and objectification across different societal structures, from feudal traditions to capitalist enterprises. The title's repetition throughout the poem is not mere rhetoric; it is a strategic emphasis on the universal struggle for women's liberation, transcending cultural and geographic boundaries. It is a call for authenticity and autonomy, urging women to define themselves on their terms, not as dictated by societal norms. The metaphor of flowering, which Naheed introduces, further illustrates this, suggesting that true emancipation for women is in breaking free from societal constraints to explore and express their individual identities.

"I Am Not That Woman" is, therefore, a potent expression of feminist resistance. It embodies the spirit of rejecting traditional roles and stereotypes, advocating for women to reclaim their identities and autonomy. The title not only resonates as a critique of patriarchy but also as a vision for feminist empowerment, marking it as an apt and powerful choice for Naheed's poem.

3.3.2 Form and Structure

Kishwar Naheed's poem "I Am Not That Woman" employs free verse to underscore its themes of defiance, resistance, and autonomy. Free from the constraints of rhyme and meter, this structural choice mirrors the poem's message of liberation from societal expectations and patriarchal norms. The absence of a fixed structure allows for an organic expression of emotions, making the speaker's voice both urgent and profound. This approach is not only a stylistic choice but also a symbolic rejection of the traditional roles imposed on women. The poem's fragmented structure, with each stanza focusing on different societal impositions, serves as a narrative of defiance. It

effectively captures the complexities of gender oppression and the multifaceted struggle of women for identity and freedom. This fragmentation mirrors the compartmentalization of women's roles in society—wife, mother, object of desire—each stanza acting as a rejection and redefinition of these identities. Naheed's use of repetition, particularly the refrain "I am not that woman," emphasizes this rejection. Each recurrence of the phrase strengthens the poem's central message, acting as a verbal protest against commodification and objectification.

Moreover, the structure highlights traditional and contemporary forms of female oppression. Naheed juxtaposes the domestic confinement of women against their commodification in consumer culture, emphasizing the pervasive nature of patriarchal control. This juxtaposition underlines that despite the changing forms of oppression—whether in the private sphere of home or the public sphere of advertising—the underlying patriarchal control remains intact. As the poem progresses, there is a noticeable shift from expressions of confinement to declarations of empowerment, marked by lines like "Now it is time for me to flower free." This metaphorical flowering represents the speaker's aspiration for self-actualization, moving from oppression to liberation. This thematic progression is mirrored in the poem's structure, moving from detailing the various forms of oppression to focusing on the act of breaking free and reclaiming autonomy. Naheed's vivid imagery and symbolism throughout the poem— "walls of stone", "chains", and "embers"—serve as powerful metaphors for oppression and resilience. These symbols are embedded within the fragmented structure, making each image stand out and reinforcing the poem's themes. The imagery of chains that "cannot smother my fragrance" suggests resilience; despite attempts to confine and define, the speaker's spirit remains unbroken.

Ultimately, the form and structure of "I Am Not That Woman" are integral to its impact. By employing free verse and a fragmented structure, Naheed not only challenges traditional poetic forms but also the societal expectations of women. The poem's progression from describing oppression to celebrating impending liberation encapsulates the journey many women undergo in the quest for autonomy and self-definition. Through this structure, Naheed articulates a powerful narrative of feminist resistance and empowerment, making "I Am Not That Woman" a compelling testament to the struggle for women's liberation.

3.3.3 Thematic Analysis

Kishwar Naheed's "I Am Not That Woman" is a poignant reflection on gender oppression, identity, and resistance, rendered through powerful imagery and firm declarations. This thematic exploration delves into how the poem intricately weaves these core ideas into its narrative. The poem is anchored by its critique of patriarchal oppression. Naheed illuminates the societal mechanisms that commodify women, highlighting how traditions like dowry and honour-related customs reduce women to mere objects of transaction. This theme is vividly portrayed through the metaphor of women hidden "behind walls of stone" while men roam freely, symbolizing the physical and metaphorical confinements imposed by societal norms.

Furthermore, Naheed addresses the commodification and objectification of women in both traditional settings and modern consumer culture. She draws a parallel between the historical trading of women for their chastity, motherhood, and loyalty and their depiction as sexual objects in contemporary advertising. This critique is encapsulated in the stark imagery of a woman on a poster, used to sell products, underscoring how patriarchal exploitation persists in various forms.

Central to the poem is the theme of resistance and defiance. Through the refrain, "I am not that woman," Naheed's speaker rejects the roles and stereotypes thrust upon her. This assertion of autonomy is a declaration of liberation from the narratives society imposes on women. The speaker's resilience is further emphasized in the lines, "my voice cannot be smothered by stones," conveying

that women's voices and identities will ultimately transcend the barriers meant to suppress them. The poem also explores themes of identity and self-assertion. Naheed's speaker challenges the imposed identities, asserting her complexity beyond societal roles. This struggle for self-definition is a broader feminist call for autonomy and freedom, urging women to reclaim their identities and live authentically. Finally, the theme of freedom and liberation permeates the poem. Naheed contrasts the restricted lives of women with the uninhibited freedoms enjoyed by men. Yet, the poem shifts towards a message of empowerment with the speaker's declaration to "flower free", symbolizing a break from oppression and a move towards personal growth and self-actualization.

In essence, "I Am Not That Woman" by Kishwar Naheed offers a compelling critique of the roles, stereotypes, and economic structures that bind women, advocating for a redefined identity that honours women's autonomy and complexity. The poem is a testament to the enduring struggle for gender equality, highlighting both the challenges and the potential for liberation inherent in the feminist endeavour. Through its incisive themes and emotive language, the poem stands as a powerful call for women to redefine themselves outside of patriarchal confines.

3.3.4 Literary Devices

Kishwar Naheed's "I Am Not That Woman" is a compelling feminist poem, skilfully utilizing literary devices to articulate themes of oppression, resistance, and self-liberation. Through repetition, symbolism, imagery, metaphor, contrast, and rhetorical questions, Naheed intensifies the emotional resonance and thematic depth, weaving a narrative that captures the struggles and resilience of women. This analysis examines how these devices contribute to the poem's profound impact.

- **Repetition for Emphasis and Defiance :** Repetition is a key device, with the refrain "I am not that woman" punctuating the poem. This repetition reinforces the speaker's refusal to conform to patriarchal stereotypes, acting as a bold declaration of autonomy. Each iteration of the refrain builds in intensity, underlining the speaker's ongoing struggle and unwavering resistance, while also enhancing the poem's rhythmic quality.
- **Symbolism and Layered Meanings :** Naheed employs symbolism to convey complex themes. The "walls of stone" symbolize societal constraints that confine women physically and culturally, hiding their true identities. Conversely, symbols like "flowers" and "embers" depict the paradox of women's roles—externally beautiful and nurturing, yet internally enduring pain and betrayal. The chains and fragrance contrast illustrates the clash between imposed restrictions and the indomitable spirit of women.
- **Vivid Imagery and Sensory Experience :** Imagery in Naheed's poem vividly brings to life the experiences of oppression and empowerment. The depiction of "half-naked" women in advertising criticizes the sexual objectification prevalent in consumer culture, while the image of "flowering free" symbolizes liberation and self-realization. Through these images, Naheed not only paints a stark picture of women's conditions but also their aspirations for freedom.
- **Metaphors for Deeper Insight :** Metaphors in the poem make abstract concepts relatable. Describing the speaker as a "commodity" traded reflects how patriarchal societies objectify women, treating them as exchangeable goods. The metaphor of walking on water even when drowning encapsulates women's resilience, portraying their ability to overcome insurmountable challenges despite systemic pressures.
- **Contrast and Juxtaposition :** Naheed uses contrast effectively to highlight the dualities in women's experiences. She juxtaposes traditional and modern modes of oppression, from the enforced marriages to objectifying advertisements, underscoring that despite different

manifestations, patriarchal control persists. The contrast between the restricting "chains" and the liberating "fragrance" powerfully symbolizes the ongoing struggle between confinement and self-expression.

- **Tonal Shifts from Anger to Hope :** The tone of the poem shifts from anger and confrontation in addressing oppressive practices to a hopeful and assertive outlook towards liberation. This tonal progression from despair to hope mirrors the speaker's transformative journey towards self-actualization.
- **Rhetorical Questions to Provoke Thought :** Naheed strategically incorporates rhetorical questions to engage readers and provoke reflection on the societal norms that continually marginalize women. These questions challenge readers to reconsider the justification of such norms and the intersecting forms of oppression.

Through these literary techniques, Naheed not only deepens the poem's impact but also ensures that its message of resistance and empowerment resonates widely. "I Am Not That Woman" stands out as a powerful expression of feminist defiance, employing a range of literary devices to transform personal grievances into a universal call for gender equality and personal freedom.

3.4 COMPARATIVE STUDY

"I Am Not That Woman" by Kishwar Naheed is a powerful testament to feminist literature that not only confronts gender oppression but also advocates for the identity and resistance of women against patriarchal norms. The poem's narrative is enriched through a comparative analysis with Maya Angelou's "Still I Rise" and Kamala Das's "An Introduction", highlighting shared and distinct themes across different cultural landscapes. Naheed's poem explicitly critiques the subjugation of women within patriarchal societies, portraying the commodification of women through traditional practices like forced marriages and the societal valuation of female chastity. Naheed's verse, "I am the woman / Whom you bought and sold / In the name of my own chastity", poignantly illustrates how women are objectified and their value tethered to purity and loyalty. Similarly, Maya Angelou's "Still I Rise" deals with the historical oppression of Black women through racism and sexism, though with a broader inclusion of racial injustice, enriching the feminist dialogue with intersectionality.

The theme of defiance is central in Naheed's work where the refrain "I am not that woman" symbolizes a forceful repudiation of societal labels and constraints, echoing a sentiment of self-definition and liberation as encapsulated in the hopeful line "Now it is time for me to flower free." Kamala Das's "An Introduction" echoes this assertion of self, challenging societal roles prescribed for women and embracing a multilingual identity as a form of personal freedom. Moreover, in "I Am Not That Woman", Naheed addresses the sexual objectification prevalent in both traditional settings and modern consumerism. This theme resonates with Sylvia Plath's "Lady Lazarus", where the speaker laments her personal suffering being exploited as a public spectacle. Both poets employ vivid imagery to critique how women's bodies and personal traumas are commodified for societal consumption. Naheed's poetry reflects the unique challenges faced by women in South Asia, particularly focusing on the rigid societal structures that dictate women's roles and identities. This cultural specificity provides a stark contrast to the universal themes of Angelou's work, which interweaves the narrative of race and gender in America, and Das's exploration of identity within the Indian societal framework. All these works, despite their varied cultural backdrops, share a common resistance against the restrictive norms imposed on women.

Thus, Naheed's "I Am Not That Woman" stands alongside Angelou's and Das's poems not only as a critique of the specific patriarchal systems of South Asia but also as part of a broader feminist discourse that transcends geographical and cultural boundaries. Each poem, with its unique

perspective, contributes to a richer, more diverse understanding of the feminist struggle, highlighting the importance of context in the fight for gender equality and personal liberation. This comparative analysis underscores the universal nature of feminist resistance while appreciating the particularities brought forth by each poet's cultural and personal milieu.

3.5 THEORETICAL PERSPECTIVES

Kishwar Naheed's "I Am Not That Woman" is a complex feminist poem that addresses multiple dimensions of gender oppression, identity, and resistance. While the poem is rooted in the socio-cultural realities of South Asia, it resonates with broader global concerns about patriarchy, commodification, and self-assertion. Various theoretical perspectives can be applied to explore the depth of the poem's meaning. Through the lenses of feminist theory, Marxist theory, psychoanalysis, intersectionality, and postcolonial theory, this analysis reveals the poem's layered critique of oppression and its call for liberation and self-definition.

- **Feminist Theory : Rejection of Gender Roles and Self-Assertion :** The most evident framework through which "I Am Not That Woman" can be interpreted is feminist theory. The poem serves as a critique of the rigid gender roles and societal expectations imposed upon women by patriarchy. Feminist theory examines how women are marginalized and denied agency in both private and public spheres, and Naheed's poem aligns with these concerns by rejecting these stereotypes. The refrain "I am not that woman" symbolizes the speaker's defiance against the roles assigned to her as a loyal wife, mother, or commodified object. Naheed also critiques the concept of women's chastity and honour as tools of patriarchal control, as seen in the lines : "I am the woman / Whom you bought and sold / In the name of my own chastity." These words reflect the social obsession with female purity, a notion that feminist theorists like Simone de Beauvoir and Germaine Greer argue serves to restrict women's freedom and maintain patriarchal dominance. The speaker's rejection of these roles is an act of self-assertion and empowerment, reflecting the feminist goal of enabling women to reclaim their identities and define themselves beyond societal norms.

- **Marxist Theory : Critique of Commodification and Capitalist Exploitation :** Naheed's poem can also be analysed through the lens of Marxist theory, which focuses on the ways in which human relationships are shaped by economic systems. From a Marxist perspective, Naheed's critique of the commodification of women aligns with the idea that patriarchal structures are intertwined with capitalist exploitation. The line "I am the commodity you traded in, / My chastity, my motherhood, my loyalty" highlights how women are treated as objects of exchange in both traditional and capitalist societies. Further, marriage, as referenced in the poem, is portrayed as an economic transaction where women are bought and sold. This critique reflects the Marxist argument that under capitalism, people (in this case, women) are reduced to commodities. Additionally, Naheed critiques modern consumer culture, where women's bodies are sexualized and exploited for profit, as seen in the lines, "The woman on that poster, half-naked, selling socks and shoes— / No, no, I am not that woman!" From a Marxist-feminist perspective, Naheed suggests that patriarchy and capitalism work together to dehumanize women by treating their labour, bodies, and identities as commodities to be bought, sold, and consumed.

- **Psychoanalytic Theory : Internalized Oppression and Reclamation of Identity :** Through a psychoanalytic lens, Naheed's poem reflects the psychological impact of internalized oppression and the struggle for personal identity. Psychoanalytic theorists, such as Sigmund Freud and Jacques Lacan, explore how individuals internalize societal norms, which shape their unconscious mind. In the case of "I Am Not That Woman", the speaker rejects the roles

she has internalized through years of societal conditioning, declaring, "Now it is time for me to flower free." This act of rejection of traditional and superimposed identities and gender roles symbolizes a reclaiming of identity from the unconscious influence of patriarchy. The poem reflects the psychological toll of living under oppressive norms, where women are expected to embody roles that deny them their autonomy. By stating "my voice cannot be smothered by stones," the speaker asserts her determination to reclaim her voice and identity from the structures that sought to silence her. This aligns with the psychoanalytic notion that liberation begins with the recognition of internalized oppression and the conscious effort to break free from it.

- **Postcolonial Theory : Resistance Against Cultural Hegemony :** Naheed's poem can also be analyzed through the lens of postcolonial theory, which examines how colonial legacies and cultural hegemony shape the identities and experiences of marginalized individuals. In postcolonial societies, women often face a double burden of oppression—first from traditional gender norms, and second from the lingering influence of colonial ideologies that reinforce those norms. Naheed's critique of both traditional practices and modern consumer culture reflects the complexities of identity in postcolonial contexts. The speaker's rejection of the roles imposed upon her—"I am not that woman"—can be seen as an act of resistance against both indigenous and colonial narratives that seek to define women's identities. Postcolonial theory emphasizes the importance of reclaiming identity and resisting cultural hegemony, and Naheed's poem aligns with this goal by asserting the speaker's right to self-definition. The poem suggests that liberation involves not only rejecting traditional norms but also challenging the global systems that perpetuate inequality, such as capitalism and consumer culture.
- **Global Feminist Perspective :** Finally, the poem resonates with global feminist movements, which emphasize the universality of women's struggles while also recognizing the importance of cultural specificity. Naheed's critique of patriarchal oppression and her call for self-assertion align with the goals of global feminism, which seeks to dismantle oppressive structures and promote gender equality across different cultural contexts. The refrain "I am not that woman" serves as a universal declaration of resistance, echoing the voices of women around the world who are challenging oppressive norms. Naheed's poem reflects the shared struggles of women globally, from the fight against forced marriages and honour-based violence to the rejection of sexual objectification in media. However, the poem also emphasizes the importance of addressing the specific cultural and economic contexts in which these struggles take place, making it a valuable contribution to the discourse on global feminism.

Thus it can be said that "I Am Not That Woman" is a richly layered poem that lends itself to multiple theoretical perspectives. Through feminist theory, the poem critiques patriarchal norms and emphasizes the importance of self-assertion. A Marxist reading highlights the commodification of women and the intersection of patriarchy with capitalism. From a psychoanalytic perspective, the poem reflects the internalized oppression women face and the psychological process of reclaiming identity. Intersectionality reveals how multiple forms of oppression shape women's experiences, while postcolonial theory emphasizes the importance of resisting cultural hegemony. Naheed's poem transcends cultural boundaries, resonating with feminist movements around the world while also addressing the specific realities of South Asian women. It is a powerful work that speaks to the universal desire for freedom and equality, making it a vital contribution to the discourse on gender, identity, and liberation. Through its multidimensional critique of oppression and its call for resistance, "I Am Not That Woman" serves as both a personal declaration of autonomy and a global anthem of defiance.

3.6 LET US SUM UP

Kishwar Naheed's poem "I Am Not That Woman" serves as a poignant critique of the commodification, objectification, and subjugation of women, transcending its South Asian context to engage with universal feminist themes. Her status as a Pakistani feminist poet deeply informs her perspective, mirroring the socio-political dynamics of women's roles in South Asia. The poem's structure—free verse with fragmented stanzas—mirrors the complex layers of female oppression, while its refrain, "I am not that woman," underscores a resolute rejection of stereotypical identities. Naheed's thematic exploration extends from traditional roles assigned to women to their portrayal in modern consumer culture, emphasizing ongoing patriarchal controls. The use of literary devices like repetition and symbolism intensifies her message, creating a vivid contrast between societal expectations and personal defiance. Comparative analyses with poets like Maya Angelou and Sylvia Plath highlight shared themes of oppression, yet underscore unique cultural challenges. The integration of feminist, Marxist, psychoanalytic, and postcolonial critiques enriches the understanding of Naheed's work, positioning her poem not only as a personal manifesto but also a universal call for gender equality and liberation. This multifaceted approach underscores the poem's significance as a seminal work in feminist literature.

3.7 QUESTIONS

1. How does Naheed's personal background influence the themes and tone of the poem "I Am Not That Woman"?
2. How is the title "I Am Not That Woman" significant to the overall message of the poem?
3. How does the poem critique the commodification and objectification of women?
4. How does Naheed depict resistance and self-liberation in the poem?
5. How does Naheed's critique of women's oppression connect with global feminist struggles?
6. How does feminist theory help us understand the core message of the poem?
7. Discuss how postcolonial theory relates to Naheed's critique of both traditional customs and modern consumer culture.

3.8 FURTHER READINGS AND RESOURCES

- Angelou, M. *And Still I Rise : A Book of Poems*. Hachette Digital, 1978.
- Beauvoir, S. de. *The Second Sex*. Translated by H. M. Parshley. Thirty Bedford Square London,1953.
- Friedan, Betty. *The Feminine Mystique*. Penguin Classics. 2010
- Das, K. (2013). *An Introduction : A Critical Spectrum*. Edited by Rajeshwar Mittapalli and Pier Paolo Piciucco, Atlantic.
- Greer, Germaine. *The Female Eunuch*. Harper Perennial Modern Classics, 2008.
- Eagleton, T. (2002). *Marxism and Literary Criticism*. Routledge, 2002.
- Said, E. *Orientalism*. Penguin, 2017.
- Woolf, Virginia. *A Room of One's Own*. Maple Press, 2018.

UNIT-4 SHYAM SELVADURAI : *FUNNY BOY*

Structure

4.0 Objective

4.1 Introduction

4.2 Introduction to the Author

4.3 Outline of the Novel

4.4 Characters in the Novel

4.5 Novel Analysis

4.5.1 Thematic Analysis

4.5.2 Significance of the Title

4.5.3 Setting of the Novel

4.6 Theoretical Perspectives

4.6.1 Postcolonial Theory

4.6.2 Queer Theory

4.7 Let Us Sum Up

4.8 Questions

4.9 Further Readings

4.0 OBJECTIVE

The objective of the study of Shyam Selvadurai's *Funny Boy* is to provide a comprehensive analysis of the novel that facilitates a deep understanding of its themes, narrative structure, and cultural context. This study aims to explore the intricate interplay of personal identity and socio-political conflict depicted in the novel, focusing particularly on the protagonist's experiences of growing up as a gay in a conservative society amidst escalating ethnic tensions in Sri Lanka. The study seeks to equip students with critical tools to analyze the novel's portrayal of complex issues such as sexual orientation, racial identity, and colonial legacies, encouraging a nuanced appreciation of its contributions to postcolonial and queer literatures. Additionally, the study material will support learners in developing analytical skills that enable them to engage with the text through various critical lenses, thereby enhancing their academic and personal insights into the broader implications of identity and resistance in a postcolonial world.

4.1 INTRODUCTION

Shyam Selvadurai's *Funny Boy* is a compelling narrative that intricately weaves the personal and political into a tapestry reflecting the tumultuous socio-political landscape of Sri Lanka during the 1970s and 1980s. Set against the backdrop of rising tensions between the Sinhalese and Tamil communities, the novel explores the complexities of identity, sexuality, and ethnic conflict through the eyes of its young protagonist, Arjie. Arjie's journey of self-discovery and his grappling with a nascent sexual identity provide a poignant counterpoint to the external conflicts escalating around him. As he navigates his way through the trials of adolescence and familial expectations, Arjie's story offers a unique perspective on the impact of societal norms on personal freedom and the formation of identity in a conservative society. Selvadurai's narrative technique in the novel blends a

rich, evocative prose with vivid characterizations and settings that bring to life the contrasts between private desires and public conflicts. The novel is not merely a coming-of-age story but also a critical examination of the effects of colonization, the struggle for personal autonomy under oppressive social systems, and the quest for dignity amidst widespread societal upheaval. This study aims to guide readers through an exploration of *Funny Boy*, examining its thematic concerns, literary style, and the broader historical context that shapes the narrative.

4.2 INTRODUCTION TO THE AUTHOR

Shyam Selvadurai, born in 1965 in Colombo, Sri Lanka, is an author whose works are profoundly influenced by his own experiences of ethnic and sexual identity conflicts. Of Tamil and Sinhalese descent, Selvadurai's personal narrative is emblematic of the broader ethnic tensions in Sri Lanka, which form a central theme in much of his writing. His family immigrated to Canada in 1984 following the outbreak of the Sri Lankan Civil War, a move that has deeply impacted his perspective and literary voice. Selvadurai's debut novel, *Funny Boy*, which is often considered semi-autobiographical, was first published in 1994 and quickly garnered critical acclaim. It explores issues of sexual identity and ethnic tension through the eyes of a young boy coming to terms with his homosexuality in a society rife with prejudice and strife. This novel, set against the backdrop of escalating violence between the Tamil and Sinhalese populations, won the Books in Canada First Novel Award and has been a significant part of Canadian and international literature discussions on postcolonial and queer themes.

His subsequent works, including *Cinnamon Gardens* (1988) and *The Hungry Ghosts* (2012), continue to explore similar themes of identity, displacement, and the quest for personal authenticity within the constraints of societal norms. Selvadurai's writing is characterized by its lyrical prose, intricate characterizations, and the sensitive portrayal of complex emotional landscapes. He skilfully navigates the intersections of personal and public histories, bringing to light the often painful realities of those living on the margins. In addition to his novels, Selvadurai has edited anthologies and written numerous articles that contribute to the discourse on LGBTQ+ rights and ethnic diversity. His works not only illuminate the challenges faced by individuals grappling with multiple identities but also celebrate the richness of living between cultures.

4.3 OUTLINE OF THE NOVEL

Shyam Selvadurai's Funny Boy is composed of six interrelated stories that chronicle the youth and teenage years of Arjie, a Tamil boy in Sri Lanka, as he matures in the politically charged Colombo of the 1970s and 1980s. Throughout the narrative, Arjie discovers his distinctiveness from other boys, comes to terms with his homosexuality, and faces the escalating tensions and ensuing violence between the Tamils and Sinhalese, leading to civil war by the novel's conclusion in 1983.

The initial story, "Pigs Can't Fly", captures Arjie's early childhood, where he relishes the monthly gatherings with his cousins at their grandparents' home. In these family meetings, free from parental oversight, the children divide into groups based on gender-typical games : the boys playing cricket and the girls, along with Arjie, enacting a fantasy wedding game known as "bride-bride." Arjie, cherishing the role of the bride, faces a challenge when a new cousin, derisively called "Her Fatness," attempts to usurp his cherished role. This conflict comes to a head when Her Fatness's mother, Kanthi Aunty, parades Arjie, dressed in a sari, before the family, provoking shock and ridicule. This public shaming leads Arjie's parents to decree that he should join the boys in cricket, a directive Arjie plans to defy. During the subsequent gathering, Arjie instigates a quarrel among the boys and manipulates Her Fatness into giving him a less prestigious role in "bride-bride," that of the groom. However, the plan backfires, and after a physical altercation, Her Fatness humiliates Arjie

once more. Blamed by his grandmother for the disruption, Arjie's frustration and isolation culminate in a tearful escape to the beach.

Sometime later, in the second story titled "Radha Aunty", Radha returns to Sri Lanka after a four-year stint in America. She has plans to marry Rajan, a family friend she met while overseas, which excites the seven-year-old Arjie, eager to see his fantasies of "bride-bride" play come to life. Despite Radha not meeting his imaginative expectations, they forge a close bond; she even involves Arjie in her makeup routine and includes him in a school play, "The King and I". During the play's rehearsals, Radha catches the attention of Anil, a Sinhalese boy, who begins to flirt with her and offers her rides home. This budding relationship angers Ammachi, especially given her traumatic past where her father was killed by a Sinhalese mob during the race riots of the 1950s. This history has hardened her stance against the Sinhalese and fuelled her support for the Tamil Tigers. As Arjie's curiosity about the ethnic tensions grows, Ammachi's disapproval escalates to outright threats against Anil's family. When Radha and Arjie attempt to smooth things over, Anil's father vehemently rejects them, declaring his son would never marry a Tamil.

The situation intensifies when Radha and Anil are discovered having lunch together, prompting Ammachi to send Radha to Jaffna for several months. Despite the separation, Radha and Anil vow to marry upon her return. However, the day Radha is supposed to come back, violent riots break out in Sri Lanka, and Arjie's brother, Diggy, reports that Radha's train was attacked by a Sinhalese mob. Radha returns home physically and emotionally scarred, unable to continue her relationship with Anil or her role in the play. Ultimately, Radha re-engages with Rajan, her initial fiancé, and they proceed with their engagement, leaving Arjie disillusioned about the power of love to overcome all obstacles.

In the third story, "See No Evil, Hear No Evil", the narrative begins with Appa acquiring a hotel and then leaving for Europe on business. Meanwhile, the family is visited by Daryl Uncle, a white Burgher journalist who has been living in Australia for the past 15 years but grew up in Sri Lanka. He has returned to document the growing violence in northern Sri Lanka. His presence brings a certain tension to the household. After Arjie overcomes a short illness with hepatitis, he and Amma accompany Daryl on a retreat to a hillside bungalow. It is during this trip that it becomes apparent Daryl and Amma once had a romantic relationship, hindered by their differing ethnic backgrounds. Despite Amma's protests, Daryl travels to Jaffna to report on the governmental corruption and violence, and his prolonged absence leads to distressing rumours of increased conflict in the area. When Daryl fails to return, Amma's pleas to the police are dismissed, and they eventually inform her that Daryl's body was found washed up, declaring it an accidental death, though Amma suspects government involvement. She seeks advice from Q.C. Uncle, a civil rights lawyer, who advises her to let go of the past, and visits the village of Daryl's former servant, where she and Arjie are driven away by the hostile locals. Amma remains deeply affected by these events, even after Appa's return.

In "Small Choices", the fourth story, Jegan, the son of one of Appa's deceased friends, comes to stay with Arjie's family and assists in the hotel business. Jegan, who previously worked with the Gandhiyan movement in Jaffna and briefly joined the Tamil Tigers, immediately intrigues Arjie, who is now entering adolescence and admires Jegan's commitment and attractiveness. However, Jegan soon encounters hostility at work, with the Sinhalese staff suspecting him of receiving undue promotions because he is Tamil, and faces surveillance and arrest by the police under suspicion of conspiracy. Though released without charges, the situation escalates as Appa receives threatening calls, his employees distance themselves, and locals vandalize Jegan's door with hate messages. Ultimately, Appa faces a difficult decision and chooses to dismiss Jegan to protect his business and family, a decision that leaves Arjie feeling that his father has unjustly sacrificed Jegan to save themselves.

In the second-to-last chapter of *Funny Boy*, called "The Best School of All", Arjie's father sends him to Queen Victoria Academy, a strict and old-fashioned school run by his uncle Diggy. His father thinks the tough environment will make Arjie act more like a traditional man. The students at this school are very athletic, very masculine, and grouped by their ethnic backgrounds. Arjie, who is in classes taught in Sinhala, sees Sinhalese students bullying Tamil students like him, often with the school vice principal's quiet approval. Arjie makes a friend at school, Shehan Soyza, who is lively and easygoing. Shehan helps Arjie get around and stands up for him against bullies. They soon start to like each other more than just friends. The school principal, known as Black Tie, often punishes Shehan for having long hair and thinks he's a bad influence on the school. Mr. Sunderalingam, the teacher of English and Drama, likes how Arjie recites a poem and tells Black Tie about it. Black Tie decides to have Arjie recite poems at a big school event, which he hopes will help him keep his job as principal. He needs to impress a powerful politician who will be there. As the event approaches, Arjie rehearses the poems, but Black Tie is very strict and punishes him and Shehan when Arjie makes mistakes. Away from school, Arjie and Shehan become closer, and one day they kiss. Shehan invites Arjie to his house, but it feels awkward, so Arjie invites Shehan to his place where they get more intimate. Arjie feels guilty afterward because his dad clearly doesn't like Shehan. Wanting to protect Shehan from more trouble at school, Arjie decides to mess up the poem recitations on purpose during the big event. He hopes this will make Black Tie look bad and take the heat off Shehan. He goes through with his plan, messing up the recitations, and afterward tells Shehan he did it all for him.

The last part of *Funny Boy*, titled "Riot Journal", is written from Arjie's perspective during his diary entries about the 1983 Tamil-Sinhala riots, which led to the Sri Lankan Civil War. Arjie writes about how Sinhalese mobs are destroying Tamil homes and businesses in Colombo, and he finds out that the government is helping these mobs by providing them with lists of Tamil families and choosing not to report the violence. Arjie's family plans to stay with friends, Chithra Aunty and Sena Uncle, for safety. However, they soon face a direct threat when someone steals petrol from Sena Uncle's van to set a Tamil family's car on fire, with the police just watching. In response, Arjie's family decides to hide with their neighbours, the Pereras, in case they are attacked. They have to act quickly when a mob burns down their house that night, leaving Arjie shocked and deeply upset by the loss.

They manage to reach Sena and Chithra's home, but the situation remains dangerous as Sena gets threatening calls accusing him of hiding Tamils. During a brief pause in the curfew, Shehan, Arjie's friend, visits and acts as if things are normal, suggesting they go see a movie. This interaction makes Arjie painfully aware of their different ethnic backgrounds. Meanwhile, an uncle in Canada advises the family to seek refugee status. While they deny it publicly, Arjie's parents secretly start applying for passports for their children. The situation worsens when they find out that Arjie's grandparents were killed, burned alive in their car. The family is devastated, and Radha visits to attend the funeral. Just before the family moves to Canada, Arjie meets Shehan one last time and realizes they have grown apart emotionally. In his final diary entry, Arjie visits his burned-down home, overwhelmed with sadness, and cries.

4.4 CHARACTERS IN THE NOVEL

Funny Boy by Shyam Selvadurai is a poignant coming-of-age novel set against the backdrop of escalating tensions between the Sinhalese and Tamil communities in Sri Lanka. The narrative explores themes of sexual identity, ethnic conflict, and the complexities of love and family through the eyes of its protagonist, Arjie. Here is a list of the main characters and their analyses :

- **Arjie Chelvaratnam—** Arjie is the protagonist, whose journey of self-discovery and sexual awakening forms the core of the novel. Described as "funny" because of his inclination

towards playing "bride-bride", a game considered feminine by his family, Arjie grapples with his identity in a conservative society. His sensitivity and imagination set him apart in a world where he constantly confronts both internal and external conflicts.

- **Amma (Arjie's Mother)—** A strong and complex character, Amma navigates the challenges of raising a child who is different in a conformist society. Her relationship with Arjie is one of the novel's most touching dynamics, showcasing her evolution from discomfort and denial about Arjie's identity to a protective and understanding ally.
- **Appa (Arjie's Father)—** Appa is a more traditional figure, representing societal norms and expectations. His struggle to accept Arjie's uniqueness brings to light the generational and ideological divides within the family. His character is critical for understanding the pressures Arjie faces in conforming to traditional masculine roles.
- **Digi (Arjie's Brother)—** Digi's character contrasts with Arjie, adhering more closely to societal expectations of masculinity and behaviour. His interactions with Arjie provide insight into the typical sibling dynamics within a context strained by larger social and cultural expectations.
- **Radha Aunty—** Radha Aunty, Arjie's aunt, is a key figure in Arjie's life. Her own romantic involvement with a Sinhalese man amidst rising ethnic tensions mirrors the personal and political conflicts that recur throughout the novel. Through Radha, the novel explores the taboo of interethnic relationships and the personal costs of societal divides.
- **Anil Jayasinghe—** Anil is Radha Aunty's Sinhalese boyfriend, who becomes a controversial figure within Arjie's Tamil family. His relationship with Radha serves as a microcosm of the broader ethnic conflict in Sri Lanka, illustrating how personal relationships can be devastated by political and ethnic allegiances.
- **Shehan Soyza—** A pivotal character in Arjie's exploration of his sexual identity, Shehan is portrayed as confident and rebellious, providing a stark contrast to Arjie's more introspective nature. Shehan helps Arjie to accept his sexuality, playing a crucial role in his emotional maturation.

The novel intricately weaves these characters' stories with the political upheaval in Sri Lanka, reflecting on how personal identities are often caught in the crossfire of political conflict. Each character contributes to the rich tapestry of the narrative, highlighting different facets of human emotion and societal expectations. The character development in "Funny Boy" is adeptly handled, with each character's journey adding depth to the exploration of themes such as identity, belonging, and resistance. Selvadurai's characters are not just victims or heroes; they are deeply flawed and real, making choices that reflect their complexities and the times in which they live. Their interactions and conflicts offer a window into the challenges of reconciling personal happiness with societal expectations. This character analysis suggests further exploration into how identity is shaped by cultural, ethnic, and familial influences, providing a fertile ground for critical engagement and discussion.

4.5 NOVEL ANALYSIS

4.5.1 Thematic Analysis

- **Masculinity and Queerness :** In Shyam Selvadurai's *Funny Boy*, the themes of masculinity and queerness are expertly interwoven to critique societal norms within Sri Lanka's conservative culture. Arjie, the protagonist, confronts the challenges of growing up queer in a society that venerates traditional masculinity—an ideal that compels adherence to rigid

behavioural norms. Labelled "funny" for his divergence from these expectations, Arjie's affinity for activities deemed inappropriate for boys marks him as deviant within the context of conventional masculinity. The narrative scrutinizes these norms through characters who both enforce and resist prescribed gender roles. Figures such as Arjie's father and the authoritarian school figure Black Tie embody the enforcement of heteronormative standards, intensifying the conflict Arjie faces. In contrast, Arjie's relationship with Shehan, who similarly eschews traditional masculinity through his artistic inclinations and appearance, highlights the tension between personal identity and societal expectations. Their relationship not only challenges the strict binaries of gender and sexuality but also represents a defiance against broader societal constraints. Set against a backdrop of ethnic conflict and lingering colonial influences, their bond advocates for a fluid understanding of identity as resistance. *Funny Boy* thus calls for a reassessment of identity and acceptance in a culturally and politically intricate environment, promoting authenticity as a form of rebellion.

- **Forbidden Love and Family :** Another important theme in the novel is forbidden love and family which intricately explores the tension between personal desires and societal norms, against a backdrop of ethnic conflict in Sri Lanka. Forbidden love, depicted through Arjie's relationship with Shehan and Radha Aunty's affair with Anil, confronts social, ethnic, and familial boundaries. These relationships, laden with obstacles from societal pressure to internal fears, underscore the harsh sacrifices and defiance necessary to pursue transcendent love. Family dynamics within the novel serve both as support and constraint. Arjie's family epitomizes societal expectations—offering protection while enforcing norms that curb individual freedom. Their mixed reactions to his and Radha Aunty's unconventional choices highlight the perpetual conflict between personal fulfilment and societal acceptance. Funny Boy probes deep into identity, belonging, and resistance, positioning personal relationships as arenas for broader cultural and political disputes. It portrays love as a potent yet challenging force against oppressive structures, demanding personal and collective bravery. The novel thus offers poignant insights into the complexities of love and family within fraught societal contexts.

- **Justice, Power, and Moral Awakening :** In Shyam Selvadurai's *Funny Boy*, themes of justice, power, and moral awakening are intricately interwoven, illustrating the complexities of confronting injustice within a society marked by ethnic and personal identity tensions. Justice is portrayed as elusive and multifaceted, challenged by the backdrop of civil unrest and systemic ethnic discrimination in Sri Lanka. Characters face injustices ranging from personal prejudices against sexual identities to broader societal wrongs. Power dynamics are central, affecting personal relationships and societal structures. In school, figures like Black Tie exemplify power's role in reinforcing oppressive norms. Politically, power manifests in the dominance of ethnic majorities, perpetuating systemic discrimination and contributing to social turmoil. Moral awakening is critical as characters like Arjie undergo significant transformations in understanding justice and personal agency. Arjie's journey from childhood to adolescence involves a deepening awareness of injustices, leading to deliberate actions like disrupting a school ceremony to protest oppressive structures. This narrative invites readers to reflect on their roles within social and power structures, emphasizing the importance of moral choices in effecting change. Selvadurai's exploration of these themes offers profound insights into growth and responsibility amidst challenging realities.

- **Nationalism, Ethnic Conflict, and Violence :** In Shyam Selvadurai's *Funny Boy*, the interplay of nationalism, ethnic conflict, and violence critically shapes both personal and collective experiences amidst the escalating Tamil and Sinhalese tensions in Sri Lanka. The novel portrays Sinhalese nationalism as a dominant force driving discriminatory policies and

violence against the Tamil minority, underpinned by a vision of a Buddhist Sinhalese nation. This ideology permeates the societal norms and daily interactions within the narrative. Ethnic conflict is central, profoundly influencing the plot and character development. The divisions between Tamil and Sinhalese communities are vividly portrayed through the experiences of Arjie's mixed family, highlighting the personal stakes of these tensions in their navigation of identity and social polarization. Violence, depicted as both an imminent physical threat and a psychological strain, reaches its zenith in the anti-Tamil riots, reshaping Arjie and his family's reality and future. It represents not only physical harm but an assault on identities, homes, and historical legacies. Through the protagonist Arjie, a young gay Tamil boy, Selvadurai offers a poignant critique of the devastating impacts of nationalism and ethnic conflict on personal and collective identities, emphasizing the deep human costs of such divisions.

4.5.2 Significance of the Title

Funny Boy is a novel intricately composed of six interconnected stories, each marking a pivotal stage in the protagonist Arjie's journey from childhood into adolescence. As Arjie explores his sexual identity, his personal narrative unfolds against the backdrop of mounting ethnic tensions in Sri Lanka, blending personal discovery with national conflict. The novel's chronological progression traces Arjie's growth, capturing his evolution from a child playing "bride-bride" to an adolescent confronting the harsh realities of his society's prejudices and the surrounding violence. This structure not only depicts Arjie's internal struggle with his gender and sexual identity but also mirrors the societal upheaval during this period. Each chapter, while self-contained, reflects a phase in Arjie's life, delving deeply into themes such as familial expectations, sexual awakening, and ethnic identity. The narrative weaves these themes into a central cohesive thread—Arjie's self-discovery amidst political unrest. The shift in settings—from family gatherings to school and broader social environments—helps illustrate both Arjie's personal growth and the socio-political landscape of Sri Lanka. Recurring motifs and symbols, like the "Best School of All" and the "bride-bride" game, recur throughout the novel, enriching the thematic exploration and highlighting Arjie's internal and societal conflicts. The narrative also closely integrates the escalating Tamil-Sinhalese conflict, aligning Arjie's personal story with the national narrative to underscore the interconnectedness of individual identities and larger political forces.

The narrative is primarily conveyed through Arjie's first-person perspective, allowing a deeply personal and introspective look at his experiences and thoughts. This perspective draws readers into Arjie's emotional and intellectual journey, engaging them with both the individual and collective challenges he faces. The structure of the novel adeptly builds and resolves tension, culminating in a finale where personal and political crises peak. The resolution offers a realistic continuation of life's complexities rather than simple solutions, reflecting the ongoing challenges faced by Arjie and his country. Through its thoughtful construction, *Funny Boy* not only tells a poignant coming-of-age story but also captures the turbulent atmosphere of a nation on the verge of civil war.

4.5.3 Setting of the Novel

The setting of the novel plays a crucial role in shaping the narrative and its themes. The novel is set in Sri Lanka, a country marked by its vibrant culture and tumultuous political history, particularly during the time period the novel covers, which spans the late 1970s and early 1980s. This setting is not just a backdrop but a central element that influences the characters' lives and the unfolding of the plot. Sri Lanka's lush landscapes, urban and rural divide, and the stark contrasts between different socio-economic regions are vividly depicted in the novel. The majority of the story takes place in the capital city, Colombo, offering a window into the lives of the urban middle-class

and wealthy families. Selvadurai meticulously details the environments that Arjie, the protagonist, navigates—from luxurious family homes to chaotic, vibrant streets and the serene beaches that offer moments of escape and reflection.

The social setting is equally important, characterized by a complex interplay of ethnic tensions between the Sinhalese majority and the Tamil minority : the latter to which Arjie's family belongs. This ethnic backdrop is crucial for understanding the personal and collective conflicts that drive the narrative. The escalating conflict eventually leads to the outbreak of the Sri Lankan Civil War shortly after the period in which the novel is set, foreshadowing the violence and upheaval that will follow. The temporal setting of the novel during the 1970s and 1980s is significant because it was a period of increasing ethnic tension and political instability in Sri Lanka. This era saw the deepening of divisions and the rise of nationalist movements, which are reflected in the characters' experiences and interactions. The political landscape is a constant undercurrent in the novel, affecting the characters' lives in direct and indirect ways and shaping the young protagonist's understanding of his identity and place in the world.

The setting affects every aspect of the story, from the characters' day-to-day activities to their broader life choices. The physical and social environments in which Arjie grows up are imbued with norms and expectations that he finds himself at odds with as he comes to terms with his sexual orientation. The lush, often idyllic landscapes of Sri Lanka contrast with the internal turmoil he experiences, highlighting the dichotomy between external appearances and internal realities. Furthermore, the settings within specific scenes—such as the secretive spots where Arjie and his love interest Shehan share intimate moments—underscore themes of concealment and discovery that permeate the narrative. These settings not only provide the physical space for the drama to unfold but also symbolize the larger societal closets that the characters inhabit. In this novel, the setting is not merely a backdrop but a character in its own right, reflecting and influencing the lives of Arjie and those around him. Shyam Selvadurai uses the setting to explore themes of identity, belonging, and conflict, making it an integral part of the storytelling. The vivid depiction of Sri Lanka's beauty and complexity serves as a powerful contrast to the personal and political conflicts that drive the narrative, making the setting a crucial element in understanding the full depth of the novel's exploration of gender, sexuality, and ethnic identity.

4.6 THEORETICAL PERSPECTIVE

Shyam Selvadurai's *Funny Boy* offers a fertile ground for theoretical analysis through various critical lenses, including postcolonial theory, queer theory, and psychoanalytic theory. This essay will explore how these frameworks illuminate different facets of the novel, focusing on the intersectionality of identity, colonial legacies, and the protagonist's psychological development.

4.6.1 Postcolonial Theory

Funny Boy engages deeply with postcolonial themes, particularly the legacies of colonialism in Sri Lanka and the ethnic tensions exacerbated by these historical influences. The novel, set against the backdrop of the lead-up to the Sri Lankan Civil War, reflects on the postcolonial state's struggle with identity and unity. Edward Said's concept of "Orientalism" can be applied to examine how colonial narratives have shaped ethnic identities and conflicts in Sri Lanka. Edward Said argues that the West constructs knowledge about the East that is stereotypical and dehumanizing, which was historically leveraged to justify colonial rule. In the context of *Funny Boy*, the remnants of these colonial narratives can be seen in the divisions between the Tamil and Sinhalese communities, as well as in the characters' engagement with Western cultural products and ideals, which are seen as markers of social status and modernity. Arjie's experience as a Tamil reflects the marginalization and otherness that is emblematic of postcolonial identity conflicts. Homi Bhabha's ideas about

cultural hybridity and the "third space" are useful here. Arjie, and indeed the broader Tamil community, inhabit this "third space" where their identities are negotiated. This space is neither fully traditional nor completely assimilated into the dominant Sinhalese culture, reflecting a hybrid identity that challenges binary distinctions between colonizer and colonized.

4.6.2 Queer Theory

Through the lens of queer theory, *Funny Boy* explores the complexities of sexual identity and societal norms. Judith Butler's concept of gender performativity provides a framework for understanding Arjie's struggles with his gender expression and emerging sexual orientation. Arjie's deviation from expected male behaviours—his preference for playing "bride-bride" and his resistance to masculine norms—illustrates Butler's argument that gender is a performance imposed by societal expectations rather than an innate attribute. Eve Kosofsky Sedgwick's work on the epistemology of the closet can also be applied to Arjie's experiences. Arjie's journey towards understanding and accepting his homosexuality mirrors the "closet" that Sedgwick discusses. The closet represents not just a hiding place but a complex social and psychological space where identity is both suppressed and created. Arjie's interactions with his family and his secretive relationship with Shehan emphasize the dangers and the personal costs of stepping out of the closet in a heteronormative society.

Thus, this novel is a rich text for theoretical analysis, offering insights into the intersections of colonial history, identity, and sexuality. Postcolonial theory helps unpack the historical and cultural dynamics that influence the characters' lives and queer theory offers a lens to view the complexities of sexual and gender identity in a conservative society. Together, these theories illuminate the multifaceted narrative of Arjie's coming-of-age in a tumultuous socio-political landscape, highlighting the broader implications of personal struggles in a postcolonial, postmodern world.

4.7 LET US SUM UP

The detailed exploration of Shyam Selvadurai's *Funny Boy* enhances our understanding of its role in postcolonial and queer literature. The discussion begins with an introduction to Selvadurai, emphasizing his influences and the personal experiences that permeate his writings. The novel's detailed analysis covers character dynamics and plot, highlighting the entwinement of individual stories with themes of identity, conflict, and resistance—specifically regarding sexual orientation and ethnic tensions. The narrative's setting in Sri Lanka is crucial, influencing the characters amidst political unrest. Theoretical frameworks deepen the insights into the protagonist's societal challenges, positioning *Funny Boy* as a profound critique of gender and ethnic norms, and underscoring its literary significance and empathetic reach.

4.8 QUESTIONS

1. How does Arjie's understanding of his own identity evolve throughout *Funny Boy*? Consider how his experiences at home, school, and in his community contribute to his self-awareness and self-acceptance.
2. How are family relationships portrayed in *Funny Boy*? Analyze the role of Arjie's family in shaping his views on gender and ethnicity.
3. Discuss the impact of colonial legacies on the characters and societal structures depicted in *Funny Boy*. How do these legacies affect the ethnic tensions and personal identities within the novel?

4. Evaluate the role of education and socialization in *Funny Boy*. How do Arjie's experiences in school reflect the broader societal attitudes towards gender and ethnicity? How do these experiences contrast with those he has at home?
5. Examine the themes of secrecy and revelation in the novel. How do these themes affect the development of characters and the progression of the narrative? What does the novel suggest about the nature and consequences of secrets?
6. How does Selvadurai use different settings within the novel as symbols for larger themes?

4.9 FURTHER READINGS

- Butler, Judith. *Bodies That Matter : On the Discursive Limits of "Sex*". Routledge,1993.
- Butler, Judith. *Gender Trouble*. Routledge Classics, 1990.
- Jazeel, Tariq. "Because Pigs Can't Fly : Sexuality, race and the geographies of difference in Shyam Selvadurai's Funny Boy". *Gender, Place & Culture*. 12 (2) : 231–249. doi :10.1080/09663690500094922
- Rao, R. Raj. "Because Most People Marry Their Own Kind : A Reading of Selvadurai's 'Funny Boy'". *ARIEL : A Review of International English Literature* Vol. 28 (1), 1997.
- Roy, A. (2002). *The God of Small Things*. Penguin India, 2002.
- Salgado, Minoli (2004). "Writing Sri Lanka, Reding Resistance : Shyam Selvadurai's Funny Boy and A. Sivanandan's When Memory Dies". *The Journal of Commonwealth Literature*. 39 (1) : 5–18. doi : 10.1177/002198904043283
- Said, Edward. *Orientalism*. Vintage, 1979.
- Tickell, Alex. *Arundhati Roy's The God of Small Things*. Routledge, 2007.

BLOCK-II

INTRODUCTION

The second block, Australian Literature, highlights the evolution of literature in a settler-colonial society where questions of land, identity, and national myth-making are central. The block is divided into four units.

Unit-five discusses Australia's literary journey from colonial dependency to cultural self-assertion. **Unit-six** A. D. Hope's poem "Australia" reveals an ambivalent relationship with the nation's landscape and cultural heritage, oscillating between critique and admiration. **Unit seven** Judith Wright, one of Australia's foremost poets, addresses themes such as love, nature, and ecological consciousness in "The Company of Lovers." Her works often highlight the tension between European settlers and the Australian land, and her poetic voice is deeply intertwined with indigenous ecological concerns. **Unit eight** describes the folk ballad tradition, represented by Banjo Paterson's "The Man from Snowy River," offers a glimpse into rural heroism, national character, and the mythic ruggedness associated with Australian identity. This selection of texts paints a multidimensional portrait of Australia, revealing how geography, colonial history, and cultural memory shape Australian literary expression.

UNIT-5 INTRODUCTION TO AUSTRALIAN LITERATURE

Structure

5.0 Objective

5.1 Introduction

5.2 The History of Australian Literature

5.3 Major Concerns in Australian Literature

5.4 Prominent Authors of Australian Literature

5.5 Landmark Writings in Australian Literature

5.6 Let Us Sum Up

5.7 Questions

5.8 Further Readings

5.0 OBJECTIVE

The objective of studying *Introduction to Australian Literature* at the postgraduate level is to provide students with a critical understanding of the historical, cultural, and socio-political contexts that have shaped Australian literary traditions. The course aims to explore the diverse voices within Australian literature—including Indigenous, settler, migrant, and diasporic narratives—while examining key themes such as colonialism, national identity, environmental consciousness, gender, and multiculturalism. Through close readings of major texts and critical perspectives, students will develop analytical skills, appreciate literary diversity, and engage with contemporary debates, positioning Australian literature within global literary discourses and postcolonial frameworks.

5.1 INTRODUCTION

Australian literature is a vibrant and evolving body of work that reflects the continent's diverse landscapes, histories, and cultures. Rooted in both Indigenous oral traditions and colonial narratives, it spans a wide spectrum—from Aboriginal Dreamtime stories to contemporary postcolonial fiction. Early Australian literature was shaped by European settlers, exploring themes of survival, exile, and the harshness of the outback. Writers like Henry Lawson and Banjo Paterson captured the spirit of the bush, while later figures such as Patrick White, the first Australian Nobel Laureate in Literature, delved into existential and national identity questions. Contemporary voices, including Tim Winton, Alexis Wright, and Kim Scott, emphasize multiculturalism, environmental consciousness, and reconciliation with Indigenous histories. Australian literature remains deeply connected to the land and its people, offering powerful insights into belonging, displacement, and cultural negotiation. It continues to assert itself as a significant force within global literary conversations.

5.2 THE HISTORY OF AUSTRALIAN LITERATURE

The history of Australian literature is deeply rooted in the diverse cultural, historical, and ecological contexts of the continent. It begins not with the arrival of Europeans in 1788, but with the rich oral traditions of the Aboriginal and Torres Strait Islander peoples (the Indigenous inhabitants of the Torres Strait Islands, located between northern Australia and Papua New Guinea). These Indigenous communities, some of the oldest continuous cultures in the world, passed down stories through oral narratives, ceremonies, songs, and dances. These traditions, often referred to as the

Dreaming or Dreamtime, are deeply intertwined with the land, embodying spiritual and ecological wisdom, as well as communal values. Although these were not written texts in the European sense, they represent a profound literary heritage that underpins the nation's cultural fabric. In the 20th century, Aboriginal writers such as Oodgeroo Noonuccal (formerly Kath Walker) began to transcribe and reinterpret these oral traditions into written forms, bringing Indigenous perspectives to the literary mainstream. Her collection *We Are Going* (1964) marked a landmark moment, introducing themes of dispossession, identity, and cultural survival into Australian poetry.

The arrival of the First Fleet in 1788 marked the beginning of the European (British) literary tradition in Australia. Early writings were primarily factual accounts—ship logs, journals, and official correspondence by explorers and colonial administrators such as Watkin Tench and Arthur Phillip. These texts focused on describing the foreign landscape, convict life, and interactions with Aboriginal people. However, they were still framed by European perceptions and literary conventions. The first creative literature produced by settlers and convicts included poetry and travel memoirs that imitated British Romantic and pastoral traditions. Poets such as Charles Harpur and Barron Field attempted to describe the Australian landscape using English literary idioms, often struggling to capture the distinctiveness of the harsh and unfamiliar environment (in *First Fruits of Australian Poetry* by Barron Field, 1819). A more distinctively Australian voice began to emerge in the mid- to late-19th century, particularly through the literature of the bush. This period witnessed the rise of a nationalistic literary identity, with the outback and bush life becoming central motifs. Writers like Henry Lawson and Banjo Paterson captured contrasting visions of rural Australia—Lawson offering a bleak, realist perspective on poverty and isolation in stories like "The Drover's Wife," while Paterson romanticised the bushman's heroism in ballads like "The Man from Snowy River." The *Bulletin* magazine, founded in 1880, played a pivotal role during this time by fostering nationalist and democratic themes in literature. Known for its motto "Australia for the Australians," the *Bulletin* promoted the myth of mateship, egalitarianism, and bush resilience, shaping literary discourse well into the 20th century.

With the federation of Australia in 1901, there was a heightened sense of national consciousness that influenced literary production. Women writers like Miles Franklin and Henry Handel Richardson began to gain recognition. Franklin's *My Brilliant Career* (1901) offered an early feminist voice, questioning the societal roles imposed on women. War literature also emerged as a significant genre during and after World War I. Poets such as Leon Gellert and novelists like Frederic Manning depicted the trauma, futility, and disillusionment of war, contributing to the ANZAC (*Australian and New Zealand Army Corps)* myth that would come to define a national ethos. In the interwar period, novelists such as Christina Stead and Eleanor Dark began exploring themes of psychological depth, cultural displacement, and urban alienation, gradually shifting the literary focus from rural to metropolitan and interior landscapes.

The post–World War II period marked the maturation of Australian literature. The most notable figure from this era is Patrick White, whose complex, symbolic novels earned him the Nobel Prize in Literature in 1973—the first and only Australian to receive this honour. White's works such as *Voss* (1957), *The Tree of Man* (1955), and *The Solid Mandala* (1966) are deeply philosophical, merging Australian settings with universal themes of human struggle and spirituality. His writing signalled Australia's arrival on the world literary stage. Meanwhile, Judith Wright emerged as a leading poet whose verse combined ecological consciousness with political advocacy, particularly for Indigenous rights. Writers from Indigenous backgrounds, such as Jack Davis, also began gaining prominence during this period, using theatre and verse to critique colonial history and promote cultural revival.

The period from the 1970s to the end of the 20th century witnessed a diversification in voices and themes, largely influenced by the rise of postmodernism, feminism, multiculturalism, and postcolonial thought. David Malouf's lyrical prose, especially in *An Imaginary Life* (1978) and *Remembering Babylon* (1993), offered meditations on language, exile, and cultural boundaries. Peter Carey, who won the Booker Prize twice—for *Oscar and Lucinda* (1988) and *True History of the Kelly Gang* (2000)—brought a playful postmodern sensibility to the reimagining of Australian myths. Tim Winton's fiction, particularly *Cloudstreet* (1991), explored working-class life, environmentalism, and spiritual yearning in Western Australia, earning both national and international acclaim. During this time, Aboriginal literature gained greater visibility and recognition. Sally Morgan's autobiographical work *My Place* (1987) became an influential text, documenting personal and communal histories of displacement and rediscovery. Kevin Gilbert's poetry and essays challenged the cultural marginalisation of Aboriginal peoples and called for justice and recognition.

In the 21st century, Australian literature continues to evolve in response to globalisation, environmental crisis, digital culture, and renewed debates around Indigenous sovereignty and reconciliation. Contemporary authors bring diverse perspectives that reflect Australia's multicultural and multi-ethnic realities. Alexis Wright's *Carpentaria* (2006) and *The Swan Book* (2013) combine Indigenous storytelling traditions with experimental narrative structures, addressing issues of land rights, colonialism, and cultural endurance. Kim Scott, a Noongar writer (a person of the south-west of Western Australia), has explored themes of historical trauma and cultural recovery in novels like *Benang* (1999) and *That Deadman Dance* (2010), both of which won the prestigious Miles Franklin Award. Christos Tsiolkas, of Greek-Australian heritage, has gained critical attention with novels like *The Slap* (2008), which interrogates family dynamics, masculinity, and moral pluralism in suburban Melbourne. Charlotte Wood's feminist dystopia *The Natural Way of Things* (2015) critiques institutional misogyny through powerful allegory. Other notable contemporary voices include Tara June Winch (*The Yield*, 2019), Melissa Lucashenko, Maxine Beneba Clarke, and Michael Mohammed Ahmad, whose works explore themes of identity, race, gender, and social justice.

Australian literature today is characterised by its plurality, intellectual rigour, and political engagement. It is no longer confined to the narratives of colonial settlement or bush survival, but has grown into a literature of complexity and global relevance. From Indigenous oral stories to postcolonial fiction and experimental poetry, Australian literature offers profound insights into the land, its peoples, and the enduring questions of who belongs, how histories are told, and what it means to be Australian. As the nation continues to reckon with its colonial past and embrace a more inclusive future, its literature serves both as a mirror and a map—reflecting its present and imagining new possibilities.

5.3 MAJOR CONCERNS IN AUSTRALIAN LITERATURE

Australian literature, since its emergence, has reflected the complex interplay between land, identity, history, and culture. As a literary tradition shaped by colonial imposition, Indigenous resistance, and multicultural influx, its thematic concerns have evolved over time in response to the nation's changing social, political, and environmental landscapes. From the earliest settler narratives to contemporary Indigenous and migrant voices, Australian writers have consistently engaged with questions of national identity, belonging, cultural conflict, displacement, ecological consciousness, and postcolonial memory. These thematic concerns not only define the contours of Australian literary imagination but also situate it within broader global conversations on decolonisation, environmentalism, and diversity.

One of the most persistent and defining concerns in Australian literature is the relationship between people and the land. The Australian landscape—with its vast deserts, rugged bush, coastal

stretches, and unpredictable climate—has long held a central place in the national literary consciousness. Early settler and colonial literature, written primarily by British immigrants, often depicted the land as alien, hostile, and unknowable. The unfamiliar terrain, with its harsh weather and strange flora and fauna, represented a challenge to European aesthetic traditions and literary sensibilities. Writers such as Marcus Clarke in *For the Term of His Natural Life* (1874) and Barbara Baynton in *Bush Studies* (1902) portrayed the landscape as a site of danger, isolation, and moral ambiguity. However, over time, Australian literature began to move beyond mere representations of the land as backdrop, instead treating it as an active presence that shapes identity, morality, and human relationships. Writers like Henry Lawson and Banjo Paterson mythologised the bush as the heart of Australian character, evoking images of mateship, stoicism, and egalitarianism. Later, authors like Judith Wright, David Malouf, and Tim Winton introduced more nuanced portrayals, reflecting ecological awareness and spiritual engagement with nature.

Closely related to the theme of landscape is the concern with national identity. From the late 19th century onwards, Australian literature has played a crucial role in the construction, critique, and re-imagining of Australian identity. In the wake of Federation (of Australia) (1901), literature became a tool for nation-building, promoting the ideals of the "typical Australian" as independent, hard-working, and egalitarian. The bushman, the digger (soldier), and the pioneer woman emerged as stock characters that symbolised the essence of Australian values. However, these representations often excluded women, Indigenous peoples, and migrants. As a result, much of post-war and postmodern Australian literature has been dedicated to questioning and subverting these national myths. The writings of Patrick White, for instance, destabilised the heroic narratives of nationhood, portraying instead spiritual emptiness, cultural stagnation, and existential alienation. More recent authors, such as Christos Tsiolkas in *The Slap* (2008), explore contemporary Australian identity in urban and multicultural settings, revealing tensions around class, ethnicity, and social change.

Another major concern in Australian literature is colonialism and its aftermath, particularly the historical and ongoing consequences of settler colonialism on Indigenous communities. For most of its history, mainstream Australian literature was complicit in the erasure or marginalisation of Aboriginal voices. The land was often depicted as empty—*terra nullius*—and Indigenous people were rendered invisible or romanticised. However, from the mid-20th century onward, Aboriginal writers began to reclaim the narrative. Authors such as Oodgeroo Noonuccal, Kevin Gilbert, Jack Davis, Kim Scott, and Alexis Wright have contributed powerfully to the body of literature that foregrounds Indigenous perspectives, history, and cultural survival. These writers grapple with issues of land rights, dispossession, cultural erasure, systemic racism, and reconciliation. Their works challenge the dominant colonial historiography and offer counter-narratives that centre Indigenous knowledge systems, languages, and cosmologies. Alexis Wright's *Carpentaria* (2006) and Kim Scott's *Benang : From the Heart* (1999) are exemplary in this regard—novels that not only critique colonial violence but also reassert Aboriginal agency, resilience, and storytelling traditions.

Migration and multiculturalism also occupy an increasingly important space in contemporary Australian literature. Post-World War II immigration from Europe, Asia, and the Middle East transformed Australia into one of the most ethnically diverse countries in the world. This demographic change is reflected in the rise of migrant narratives that deal with cultural dislocation, assimilation, hybridity, and the negotiation of multiple identities. Writers such as Nam Le (*The Boat*, 2008), Alice Pung (*Unpolished Gem*, 2006), and Michael Mohammed Ahmad (*The Tribe*, 2014, and *The Lebs*, 2018) explore the complexities of growing up between cultures, challenging monolithic definitions of what it means to be Australian. These texts often deal with the politics of language, racism, intergenerational conflict, and the search for belonging, providing fresh perspectives on national identity and citizenship.

Feminist concerns have also become increasingly prominent in Australian literature. While early women writers like Miles Franklin and Nettie Palmer laid the groundwork for gender-conscious writing, later authors such as Helen Garner, Thea Astley, Kate Grenville, and Charlotte Wood have addressed the gendered dimensions of domestic life, violence, power, and societal expectations. Charlotte Wood's The Natural Way of Things (2015) is a powerful feminist dystopia that critiques institutional misogyny and the control of female bodies. Women's writing in Australia has continually interrogated patriarchal structures, giving voice to the experiences of women across different classes, ethnicities, and historical periods. On the other hand, environmental concerns, particularly climate change and ecological degradation, have emerged as pressing themes in recent Australian literature. Given the continent's vulnerability to bushfires, droughts, and biodiversity loss, Australian writers have responded with narratives that foreground ecological ethics and environmental responsibility. The works of Tim Winton, especially Breath and Dirt Music, evoke the fragility of coastal ecosystems and the moral implications of human interaction with nature. Climate fiction (cli-fi) is also gaining traction, with authors addressing speculative futures shaped by environmental collapse and advocating for sustainable relationships with the land.

5.4 PROMINENT AUTHORS OF AUSTRALIAN LITERATURE

Australian literature has been shaped by a wide range of voices, each reflecting the unique socio-political and environmental realities of the continent. From colonial chroniclers and bush poets to contemporary novelists and Indigenous writers, the country's literary tradition has continually evolved. The following overview highlights several of the most influential authors whose works have significantly shaped and defined Australian literary identity. Perhaps the most internationally renowned figure in Australian literature is **Patrick White**, the first and only Australian to win the Nobel Prize in Literature (1973). White's novels, including *Voss* (1957), *The Tree of Man* (1955), and *The Solid Mandala* (1966), are known for their symbolic depth, philosophical inquiry, and psychological complexity. His fiction delves into the spiritual emptiness and existential dilemmas of Australian settler life, often critiquing the cultural sterility of the middle class. Through richly layered narratives and often obscure symbolism, White elevated Australian literature to global literary prestige and remains a towering figure in the canon.

In the realm of poetry and activism, **Oodgeroo Noonuccal** (formerly Kath Walker) stands as a foundational voice of Aboriginal literature. Her ground-breaking collection *We Are Going* (1964) was the first book published by an Aboriginal Australian. With clarity and urgency, her poems explore themes of land dispossession, racial injustice, and Indigenous cultural identity. Oodgeroo's literary contributions were as politically powerful as they were aesthetically moving, marking a turning point in Australian literature by bringing Aboriginal perspectives into mainstream discourse. Her work continues to inspire generations of Indigenous and non-Indigenous writers alike. **Henry Lawson** and **Andrew Barton "Ban-jo" Paterson** were other two pivotal figures of late 19th-century Australian literature who captured the mythos of the bush. Lawson, through short stories such as *The Drover's Wife (1892)*, presented a bleak and realist depiction of rural life, focusing on hardship, loneliness, and social injustice. Paterson, by contrast, celebrated the adventurous and romanticised vision of the outback in ballads like *Waltzing Matilda (1895)* and *The Man from Snowy River (1890)*. Together, their writings contributed significantly to the formation of Australian nationalism and helped define the bush as a central symbol in the country's literary imagination.

Among female authors, **Miles Franklin** holds a place of singular importance. Her semi-autobiographical novel *My Brilliant Career* (1901) challenged gender norms and asserted a strong feminist voice at a time when women's literary contributions were often dismissed. The Miles Franklin Award, Australia's most prestigious literary prize, is named in her honour, underscoring her enduring legacy in shaping the nation's literary culture. **Tim Winton**, one of the most celebrated

contemporary Australian novelists, is known for his lyrical prose and deep ecological consciousness. His novels—such as *Cloudstreet* (1991), *Breath* (2008), and *Dirt Music* (2001)—often explore working-class life, familial bonds, spiritual longing, and the fragility of Australia's coastal environment. Winton's characters are frequently caught between despair and transcendence, and his narratives reflect a moral and ecological depth that speaks powerfully to modern Australia. Indigenous novelist **Kim Scott**, a Noongar writer from Western Australia, has emerged as a leading literary figure with works like *Benang* (1999) and *That Deadman Dance* (2010), both of which won the Miles Franklin Award. His fiction engages with the complexities of Aboriginal identity, intergenerational trauma, and cultural healing, often blending Western literary forms with Indigenous storytelling techniques.

Alexis Wright, another acclaimed Aboriginal writer, has received widespread recognition for her innovative and expansive narratives. Her novel *Carpentaria* (2006) is a monumental work that interweaves mythology, political satire, and magical realism to portray the resilience of Aboriginal communities in northern Australia. Wright's writing is experimental and deeply rooted in Indigenous epistemologies, offering an alternative vision of Australian literature that challenges colonial narratives. **And, Peter Carey**, a two-time Booker Prize winner, is celebrated for his postmodern style and historical reimaginings. His novels *Oscar and Lucinda* (1988) and *True History of the Kelly Gang* (2000) reflect a fascination with Australian myths, colonial legacy, and questions of truth and storytelling. Carey's fiction is both playful and politically astute, positioning him among the most important contemporary Australian authors.

5.5 LANDMARK WRITINGS IN AUSTRALIAN LITERATURE

Australian literature is marked by a wide array of landmark texts that have played a pivotal role in shaping the literary, cultural, and political consciousness of the nation. These works not only reflect the historical and social transformations of Australia but also interrogate questions of identity, belonging, colonialism, and ecology. Spanning genres such as poetry, novel, drama, and life writing, these writings have contributed significantly to the global recognition of Australian literature as a distinctive voice within world literature.

A foundational landmark in Australian literature is **Miles Franklin's** *My Brilliant Career* (1901). As one of the first novels written by an Australian woman to gain widespread attention, it represents a powerful feminist declaration at a time when women's voices were largely silenced in literary and public life. The semi-autobiographical story of Sybylla Melvyn—a fiercely independent young woman who rejects traditional roles of wife and mother in pursuit of intellectual and personal freedom—marked a bold departure from prevailing literary norms. Franklin's portrayal of gender, class, and ambition continues to resonate, and the establishment of the *Miles Franklin Literary Award* in her name is a testament to the enduring significance of this work. In the early 20th century, **Henry Handel Richardson's** *The Fortunes of Richard Mahony* (1917–1929) emerged as another major literary achievement. Comprising three volumes—*Australia Felix*, *The Way Home*, and *Ultima Thule*—this novel traces the tragic life of a British migrant doctor in colonial Victoria. Drawing on Richardson's own family history, it presents a powerful psychological portrait of alienation and decline. Through Richard Mahony's struggles, Richardson explores the tensions between old-world sensibilities and the rawness of the colonial environment, raising profound questions about migration, cultural displacement, and the costs of ambition in a new land.

A monumental shift in Australian literature came with the works of **Patrick White**, particularly his novel *Voss* (1957), which is widely regarded as a masterwork of modern Australian fiction. Based loosely on the life of German explorer Ludwig Leichhardt, *Voss* explores the metaphysical journey of a European intellectual who ventures into the Australian interior and ultimately faces spiritual and physical ruin. The novel combines psychological depth with symbolic

richness, positioning the Australian landscape as a space of both mystery and existential challenge. White's language, dense with imagery and introspection, revolutionised Australian fiction, moving it away from realist depictions towards a more introspective, symbolic mode. His Nobel Prize in Literature (1973) was a watershed moment that brought international recognition to Australian writing.

In the domain of Aboriginal literature, **Oodgeroo Noonuccal's** (formerly Kath Walker) *We Are Going* (1964) stands as a landmark publication. As the first poetry collection published by an Aboriginal Australian, it gave voice to Indigenous experiences of colonisation, dispossession, and cultural survival. Noonuccal's poems are direct, politically charged, and grounded in a deep sense of belonging to the land. The title poem "We Are Going" speaks to the loss of country, language, and identity, articulating a collective grief and resistance. Her work inaugurated a vital tradition of Aboriginal writing that continues to challenge and transform Australian literary and political discourses. Another essential text is **Christina Stead's** *The Man Who Loved Children* (1940), a psychologically penetrating novel that critiques familial dysfunction, patriarchy, and idealism. Though not widely appreciated during her lifetime, Stead's work was later championed by writers such as Saul Bellow and Jonathan Franzen for its emotional intensity and stylistic innovation. The novel's portrayal of the Pollit family—particularly the egotistical father figure Sam—is a brilliant dissection of power, delusion, and the complexity of human relationships. Stead's internationalist outlook and modernist techniques marked her as one of the most original voices in 20th-century Australian literature.

David Malouf's *Remembering Babylon* (1993) is another milestone in contemporary Australian fiction. Set in 19th-century Queensland, the novel tells the story of Gemmy Fairley, a white boy raised by Aboriginal people, who re-enters European settler society and becomes a figure of fear and fascination. Through lyrical prose and layered narration, Malouf explores themes of cultural hybridity, colonial anxiety, and the porous boundaries between civilisation and wilderness. *Remembering Babylon* offers a profound meditation on language, identity, and the tensions between European and Indigenous worldviews, earning it nominations for the Booker Prize and the International Dublin Literary Award. In more recent years, **Tim Winton's** *Cloudstreet* (1991) has become one of the most beloved and critically acclaimed novels in Australian literature. Chronicling the lives of two working-class families in post-war Perth over two decades, the novel captures the rhythms of everyday life, the struggles of economic hardship, and the redemptive power of community. Winton's prose combines realism with mystical elements, and his deep engagement with the Western Australian landscape adds a spiritual dimension to the narrative. *Cloudstreet* has become a cultural touchstone, widely studied and adapted for stage and television, and emblematic of the nation's post-war social history.

The 21st century has seen landmark texts emerge from Indigenous authors that reshape national narratives. **Kim Scott's** *Benang* (1999), the first novel by an Indigenous author to win the Miles Franklin Award, is a powerful exploration of cultural genocide, identity, and the process of healing. The novel confronts the eugenics policies that sought to "breed out" Aboriginal blood and uses experimental narrative techniques to recover suppressed histories. Similarly, **Alexis Wright's** *Carpentaria* (2006), a sprawling epic of Indigenous life in the Gulf of Carpentaria, blends realism, myth, and political satire to create a uniquely Indigenous literary form. Her work, which won the Miles Franklin Award and other accolades, offers a radical reimagining of both landscape and narrative structure, challenging Eurocentric literary conventions.

5.6 LET US SUM UP

Australian literature is a rich and evolving tradition that reflects the nation's cultural diversity, colonial history, and deep connection to the land. From the ancient oral traditions of

Aboriginal peoples to the postcolonial and multicultural narratives of contemporary writers, Australian literature engages with vital themes such as identity, belonging, dispossession, environment, and reconciliation. Key figures such as Patrick White, the nation's only Nobel Laureate, revolutionised Australian fiction through symbolic and philosophical explorations of the human condition. Feminist pioneers like Miles Franklin and Indigenous voices like Oodgeroo Noonuccal brought gender and race to the forefront of national discourse. Landmark works such as *My Brilliant Career*, *Voss*, *We Are Going*, *Cloudstreet*, and *Carpentaria* have each played a transformative role in shaping literary and cultural narratives. Contemporary authors including Tim Winton, Kim Scott, Alexis Wright, and Christos Tsiolkas continue to explore issues of ecological crisis, multicultural identity, and historical memory. Australian literature today stands as a diverse, inclusive, and globally significant body of work, constantly reimagining national identity while fostering critical engagement with Australia's colonial past and complex present. These landmark texts and authors not only define the Australian experience but also contribute powerfully to world literature.

5.7 QUESTIONS

1. How does Australian literature reflect the nation's historical relationship with land and landscape, and how have these representations evolved from colonial to contemporary times?
2. In what ways have Indigenous writers like Oodgeroo Noonuccal, Kim Scott, and Alexis Wright contributed to redefining Australian literary narratives and challenging colonial discourse?
3. What are the major thematic concerns that recur across different periods of Australian literature, and how do these reflect the changing cultural identity of the nation?
4. How did Patrick White's novels, particularly *Voss*, revolutionise the form and style of Australian fiction, and what distinguishes his literary vision from earlier writers like Henry Lawson or Banjo Paterson?
5. How do contemporary Australian literary works by authors such as Tim Winton, Christos Tsiolkas, and David Malouf engage with issues of multiculturalism, social change, and national belonging?

5.8 FURTHER READINGS

- Peter Pierce (ed.), *The Cambridge History of Australian Literature (Cambridge University Press, 2009)*
- Ken Gelder and Paul Salzman, *The New Literary History of Australia (Oxford University Press, 1988)*
- Nicolas Birns and Rebecca McNeer (eds.), *A Companion to Australian Literature Since 1900 (Camden House, 2007)*
- Bruce Bennett and Jennifer Strauss (eds.), *The Oxford Literary History of Australia (Oxford University Press, 1998)*
- Philip Mead, *Networked Language : Culture & History in Australian Poetry (Australian Scholarly Publishing, 2008)*

UNIT-6 A.D. HOPE : "AUSTRALIA"

Structure

6.0 Objectives

6.1 Introduction

6.2 A.D. Hope

- 6.2.1 About the poet : Life and Works
- 6.2.2 Writing Style of the Poet
- 6.2.3 Some Major Poems of A.D. Hope

6.3 Poem : "Australia"

- 6.3.1 Background
- 6.3.2 Introduction of the Poem
- 6.3.3 Title of the Poem
- 6.3.4 Theme of the Poem
- 6.3.5 Text
- 6.3.6 Stanza wise explanation of the Poem
- 6.3.7 Analysis
- 6.3.8 Critical Appreciation of the Poem
- 6.3.9 Literary Devices in the Poem

6.4 Glossary

6.5 Let Us Sum Up

6.6 Questions

6.7 Further Readings

6.0 OBJECTIVES

After reading this unit you will be able to :

- Discuss the life and works of the poet A.D. Hope.
- Get the information about the writing style and major works of the poet.
- Know the background and introduction of the Poem.
- Understand the title.
- Know the various themes of the poem.
- Understand the poem with the help of stanza-wise explanation.
- Analyze and do critical appreciation of the poem.
- Trace the various literary devices and techniques applied in the formation of the poem.

6.1 INTRODUCTION

Dear learners! The purpose of this unit is to introduce you to the poem "Australia" by A. D. Hope. This poem is considered an inspirational poem in Australian poetry. It explores themes of national identity, colonial history, and cultural heritage. Written during a time of significant social and political changes in the Mid-Twentieth century in Australia, the poem reflects the anxieties and tensions of its era. Although the poem was written in the Mid-Twentieth century, it has timeless themes that continue to resonate with readers today in this poem. "Australia" offers a biting critique of Australian society and culture through its use of satire, irony, and vivid imagery. It challenges conventional notions of identity and invites readers to reconsider their assumptions about their country and its history. By the end of this unit, you will be able to explore the themes, techniques, and messages present in the poem "Australia". You will also understand how A. D. Hope's works continue to provoke critical reflection and discussion on the complexities of Australian national identity.

6.2 A.D. HOPE

6.2.1 Life and Works

Hello dear learners! Let us begin this unit with the introduction of the poet A. D. Hope.

Alec Derwent Hope, commonly known as A. D. Hope, was one of Australia's most celebrated poets of the Twentieth century. He was not only a poet but also a teacher and literary journalist. His life and work contributed significantly to the landscape of Australian literature. Let us take a detailed look at his life and career :

Early Life and Education : A. D. Hope was born on July 21, 1907, in Cooma, New South Wales, Australia. His father was Presbyterian minister and mother Florence Ellen, née Scotford. He grew up in rural New South Wales, where he developed an early love for literature and poetry. Alec attended high school in 1919 after being home schooled. He spent two years at Leslie House School and later transferred to Bathurst High School in 1921. He earned his Intermediate and Leaving certificates and repeated his matriculation studies at Fort Street Boys' High in Sydney in 1924. At Fort Street, he was surrounded by intellectual pursuits, and he had classmates like R.G. Howarth, who later became a poet and professor. Then enrolled at the University of Sydney, where he studied English literature and language. After completing his undergraduate degree, he won a Rhodes Scholarship to study at the University of Oxford, where he furthered his studies in literature.

Hope's university journey was a remarkable one. He attended the University of Sydney, where he studied philosophy and English. He was an outstanding student and achieved first-class honours in both of these subjects, which earned him a well-deserved university medal. His philosophy professor, John Anderson, was a great influence on him because of his critical approach to religious, social, and political wisdoms. As a result, Hope made the decision to avoid any religious and political commitments for the rest of his life.

Did you know that in 1928, Hope was awarded a coveted scholarship to study English literature and languages at University College, Oxford? Although he didn't maintain his initial academic enthusiasm, he ultimately became a respected vocational psychologist and educational lecturer in Sydney.

Hope befriended Penelope Robinson in Canberra where she worked as a typist. They tied the knot in 1938 and moved to Sydney. Hope shifted his career to literary studies in 1939. They had three children, Emily in 1940 and twins, Geoffrey and Andrew, four years later.

Academic and literary career : Hope embarked on an academic career upon his return to Australia. He taught English literature at various universities, including the University of Sydney, the University of Melbourne, and the Australian National University. He also spent time teaching in the United States, with positions at Stanford University and the University of California, Berkeley.

Hope is a poet who began writing at an early age. His works were published in various magazines throughout the 1920s and 1930s, including the Bathurst High school magazine and several Sydney University publications. After returning to Sydney, he continued publishing his poetry in literary journals such as Southerly, Meanjin, and Australian Poetry. He also began reviewing books for these journals. During his time at Teachers' College, he broadcasted school talks under the pseudonym "Anthony Inkwell" for the Australian Broadcasting Commission's Argonauts radio program for children.

In 1943, Hope's famous poem "Australia" was published in Meanjin. The poem reflected his mixed feelings about his homeland. It included lines like "Where second-hand Europeans pullulate / Timidly on the edge of alien shores". Hope also contributed other poems such as "Observation Car" (1943) and "Standardisation" (1944) to two privately circulated booklets. These poems became frequent anthology pieces.

Hope supported the invention of a surrealist poet named Ern Malley by his friends James McAuley and Harold Stewart in 1944. This was created to hoax the editor of the modernist journal Angry Penguins, Max Harris. However, the hoax resulted in obscenity charges against the journal, revealing the censorious society of the time.

In 1946, Hope moved to the University of Melbourne, where he worked as a senior lecturer in English. His students remembered his quiet lecturing style, which seemed as if he were thinking aloud and gradually surrounding the topic with a variety of reflections (Buckley 1983, 61-62).

Literary Works : He published his first book of poems, "The Wandering Islands" in 1955, and followed it up with several volumes of new and collected poems. A. D. Hope's poetry is characterized by its intellectual depth, wit, and formal mastery. Hopes initial poetry works were featured in a publication, in 1943 which was an effort with Harry Hooton and Garry Lyle. The publication, lacking a title or price spanned three editions known as *Number One* (1943) *Number Two* (1944) and *Number Three* (1948). Among the poems selected by Hope for reprinting from the two issues are "The Lingam and the Yoni", "Observation Car" and "Massacre of the Innocents". Other works from around the time include "Pygmalion", "The Return, from the Freudian Islands" (*Australian Poetry*, 1943) well as "Australia" and "Standardisation" (*Australian Poetry*, 1944).

His poetic style often combined traditional forms with modernist sensibilities. Throughout his career, he published numerous collections of poetry, each exploring a wide range of themes. Some of his most renowned works include "The Wandering Islands" (1955), "A Late Picking" (1975), "The Age of Reason" (1960), and "Orpheus" (1991). Hope's poetry might be traditional in form, but it is thoroughly modern. The two outstanding examples of it are "Conquistador" (1947) and "The Return from the Freudian Isles" (1944). Both poems are satirical and have a striking clarity of diction. Apart from his satirical poems, Hope also wrote religious and metaphysical poems, as well as erotic verse, which often sparked controversy, as did his criticisms of the cultural establishment, which he considered pretentious and empty. Hope also wrote essays and criticism, including "A Midsummer Eve's Dream" (1970), "The Cave and the Spring" (1965), and "Native Companions" (1974). For his contributions to literature, Hope was made a member of the Order of the British Empire in 1972 and a Companion of the Order of Australia in 1981.

Hope's poetry explores a variety of themes, including love, sexuality, mortality, politics, philosophy, and the human condition. He was known for his keen observations of society and

culture, often offering incisive commentary on contemporary issues. His work was marked by a sophisticated use of language and imagery, as well as a deep engagement with literary tradition.

Critical Acclaim : A.D. Hope was a remarkable poet who gained recognition both in Australia and around the world for his impressive work. His writing was loved for its intellect, beauty, and technical skill, and he won many awards, including the Britannica Australia Award, the Order of Merit of the Italian Republic, and the Queen's Gold Medal for Poetry in 1968. A.D. Hope had a significant impact on Australian literature, playing a crucial role in shaping the development of poetry in the country. Even today, his exceptional work is still read and admired by people of all ages. His legacy as a poet of great talent and insight remains firmly established in the canon of Australian literature. A.D. Hope passed away on July 13, 2000; but his rich body of work continues to be celebrated for its depth, beauty, and relevance.

6.2.2 Writing Style of the Poet

Let us now discuss the writing style of the poet. A.D. Hope. Each writer has a unique style to convey their ideas and thoughts. Hope was a marvellous poet who had a unique writing style that stood out for several reasons. First, he had an incredible intellect and often explored complex ideas in his poetry, drawing on his knowledge of literature, philosophy, history, and science. Additionally, he was a master of poetic form and technique, using traditional forms in new and innovative ways. Although his writing displayed intellectual depth, his poetry was equally stunning and lyrical, featuring vivid imagery and poetic language that could evoke strong emotions. A.D. Hope also had a great sense of humour and often used wit and irony in his writing to poke fun at societal norms and political ideologies. He was not afraid to tackle controversial issues and used his poetry as a platform for social and political commentary, advocating for social justice, human rights, and intellectual freedom.

In short it can be said that A.D. Hope's writing style was characterized by its elegance, precision, and attention to detail. He had a remarkable ability to convey complex ideas in a concise and memorable way, creating poetry that was both intellectually stimulating and aesthetically pleasing. It is no wonder that his work remains significant and influential in the landscape of Australian literature.

6.2.3 Some Major poems of A. D. Hope

A. D. Hope was a prolific poet, and several of his poems are considered major works within Australian literature. Here are some of them :

1. **"The Death of the Bird" :** As mentioned earlier, "The Death of the Bird" is one of Hope's most renowned poems. It explores themes of mortality, transience, and the beauty of life through the metaphor of a bird's death.
2. **"Australia" :** This poem is a satirical critique of Australian society and politics. It delves into themes of cultural identity, nationalism, and the complexities of Australian history.
3. **"The Gateway" :** "The Gateway" is a philosophical poem that explores themes of human existence, the passage of time, and the search for meaning. It reflects Hope's existential concerns and his engagement with philosophical thought.
4. **"The Return from the Freudian Isles" :** This poem is a humorous and satirical take on psychoanalysis and Freudian theory. It showcases Hope's wit, intellect, and mastery of language.

5. **"The Double Looking Glass" :** In this poem, Hope explores themes of perception, reality, and the nature of consciousness. It reflects his interest in psychology and philosophy and his fascination with the workings of the human mind.

6. **"Meditation on a Bone" :** This poem is a meditation on mortality and the human condition. It reflects Hope's existential concerns and his exploration of themes related to death, decay, and the passage of time.

7. **"The Garden of Persephone" :** This poem draws on classical mythology to explore themes of beauty, desire, and the cycle of life and death. It reflects Hope's interest in ancient literature and his ability to weave together diverse mythological elements into a cohesive narrative.

6.3 POEM : "AUSTRALIA"

6.3.1 Background

"Australia" is one of the most famous poems by A. D. Hope. "Australia" was written in the mid-20th century, during a period of significant social and political change in Australia. It was first published in 1939, but it gained more attention and acclaim in the post-World War II era.

At the time when A. D. Hope wrote "Australia", there was a growing sense of nationalism and debate surrounding Australian identity. The poem reflects this by exploring various aspects of Australian culture, history, and society.

Australia has a complex colonial history, having been settled by Europeans in the late 18th century. The poem references this history, including the arrival of British colonizers and the displacement and mistreatment of Indigenous Australians. A. D. Hope was known for his outspoken views on politics and society, and "Australia" can be seen as a reflection of his social commentary. According to Hope Australia is a country of immigrants from various regions of the world. Most of the individuals were dependent and the government took care each of them. The poem critiques various aspects of Australian society, including its treatment of Indigenous peoples, its reliance on British heritage, and its role in global politics. The poem is written in a satirical and ironic tone, employing humour and wit to critique its subject matter. Hope's use of satire allows him to address serious issues in a thought-provoking and engaging way.

"Australia" was initially controversial due to its satirical portrayal of Australian society and politics. However, it has since become recognized as one of A. D. Hope's most important works and an inspirational piece of Australian literature.

6.3.2 Introduction of the poem

Dear learners! Let us start the poem with the introduction. "Australia" is a satirical poem which was first published in 1939. It was a time when the country was figuring out what its national identity was, what its colonial heritage meant, and where it stood in the world. The poem is made up of several stanzas, each one covering a different aspect of Australian culture, history, and society. The poet uses humour, irony, and sharp wit to offer a critique of various elements of Australian life, including its colonial past and current politics. It sheds light on the country's history and gives us some scope for thought!

So, the poem "Australia" explores some really interesting themes like the impact of British colonization, the mistreatment of indigenous peoples, how European culture has influenced Australia, and the country's relationship with other nations. It challenges the traditional ideas of Australian identity and asks some thought-provoking questions about the country's loyalty to its British heritage.

Despite its critical tone, “Australia” also presents the unique landscape, flora, and fauna of the continent. Hope’s profound love for the environment in Australia is evident through his vivid descriptions and lyrical language, which create a multifaceted portrayal of the country’s beauty and contradictions.

6.3.3 Title of the poem

A.D. Hopes poem “Australia” has a clear and straightforward title that introduces the subject matter and theme of the work. However, the poem’s exploration of Australian identity, culture, and history is much more complex and profound than the title suggests. Despite its simplicity, the title does not do justice to the depth and complexity of the poem’s themes.

The poem “Australia” talks about the national identity of Australians. The title suggests that the poem will explore what it means to be Australian and examine the unique characteristics that define the country and its people. The title also indicates that the landscape and environment of Australia may play a significant role in the thematic and imagistic elements of the work, which is pretty cool, right! Throughout the poem, Hope vividly describes the Australian landscape and its natural wonders, which makes it a delightful read.

The title hints at its grand scope and ambition. It aims to capture the essence of an entire nation within its verses which is pretty impressive, don’t you think? This wide scope gives Hope an opportunity to address a variety of topics ranging from colonial history to contemporary politics, and offer a comprehensive critique of Australian society.

The poem is a reflection of the universal themes and issues that are relevant to all of us, regardless of where we come from. It explores questions of identity, history, and cultural heritage, and it's something that readers all over the world can relate to. Interestingly, the simplicity of the title is in contrast to the complexity and irony of the poem itself. It is almost like the title is trying to lure you in, inviting you to explore more about Australia and what it represents. In a nutshell, “Australia” is a perfect title that encapsulates the thematic scope, geographical context, and overarching themes of A. D. Hope’s poem. It is a great example of how even the simplest of things can hold a wealth of meaning and depth.

6.3.4 Theme of the poem

The poem “Australia” tackles the complex issue of Australian identity. It examines the tension between the country’s colonial heritage and its evolving sense of nationhood. Through the use of satire and irony, Hope critiques various aspects of Australian society and culture. The poem also explores the history, politics, and social dynamics of the country.

The impact of British colonization on Australian identity can be seen in the poem. Hope questions the extent to which Australia has forged its own unique identity independent of its British roots. He draws attention to the contradictions and complexities inherent in Australia’s relationship with its colonial heritage. This includes the reverence of British institutions and the enduring impacts of cultural imperialism. Despite this, Hope portrays the distinctiveness of the Australian landscape and environment. He showcases the country’s natural beauty and unique flora and fauna, highlighting its sense of identity that is separate from its European origins. The vast expanses of wilderness and geographical isolation further contribute to this uniqueness, setting it apart from other countries.

The poem is a thought-provoking exploration of themes that are crucial to understanding the Australian identity and its future. By examining issues such as nationalism, cultural identity, and the search for meaning in a post-colonial world, Hope challenges readers to think deeply about the complexities of Australian identity. His poem demonstrates how the country’s colonial past

continues to shape its present and future, and urges us to reflect on the ways in which this past impacts our society today. By engaging with these themes, we can gain a greater appreciation of our cultural heritage and work towards creating a more inclusive and equitable society for all.

6.3.5 "Australia"

(Text)

A Nation of trees, drab green and desolate grey
In the field uniform of modern wars,
Darkens her hills, those endless, outstretched paws
Of Sphinx demolished or stone lion worn away.

They call her a young country, but they lie :
She is the last of lands, the emptiest,
A woman beyond her change of life, a breast
Still tender but within the womb is dry.

Without songs, architecture, history :
The emotions and superstitions of younger lands,
Her rivers of water drown among inland sands,
The river of her immense stupidity

Floods her monotonous tribes from Cairns to Perth.
In them at last the ultimate men arrive
Whose boast is not : "we live" but "we survive",
A type who will inhabit the dying earth.

younger lands immense stupidity monotonous tribes
And her five cities, like five teeming sores,
Each drains her : a vast parasite robber-state
Where second hand Europeans pullulate
Timidly on the edge of alien shores.

Yet there are some like me turn gladly home
From the lush jungle of modern thought, to find
The Arabian desert of the human mind,
Hoping, if still from the deserts the prophets come,

Such savage and scarlet as no green hills dare

Springs in that waste, some spirit which escapes

The learned doubt, the chatter of cultured apes

Which is called civilization over there.

6.3.6 Stanza Wise Explanation of the Poem

Stanza 1

A Nation of trees, drab green and desolate grey

In the field uniform of modern wars,

Darkens her hills, those endless, outstretched paws

Of Sphinx demolished or stone lion worn away.

Explanation : In this beautiful stanza, the poet skilfully paints a vivid picture of a nation struggling to cope with modernity and the aftermath of conflict. The poet describes how Australia was once a nation of trees, but now the greenery has been replaced by the dull and lifeless greys of desolation. The nation is now like a soldier dressed in the uniform of modern warfare, causing the hills to darken. This suggests that the society is facing difficulties in the aftermath of war.

The poet goes on to draw a comparison between the hills and ancient, weathered monuments. In particular, the poet focuses on a demolished Sphinx or a stone lion that has been worn away by time. Here, the poet uses the symbol of the Sphinx to evoke a sense of decay, loss, and the passage of time. This suggests that the nation's landscape bears the scars of its history.

Through these powerful symbols, the poet invites readers to contemplate the complexities of national identity, resilience, and the enduring echoes of past glory.

The poet describes Australia as being a "nation of trees, drab green and

The poet describes Australia as being a "nation of trees, drab green

The poet describes Australia as being a "nation of trees, drab green and

Comments

- With the help of imagery and metaphorical language, the poet paints a picture of a landscape dominated by trees, yet devoid of vitality, draped in the drab hues of desolation.
- The nation is likened to a soldier embellished in the uniform of contemporary warfare, suggesting a society entrenched in the struggles of the present.
- Visual image : The imagery of darkening hills and crumbling monuments evokes a sense of decay and loss, hinting at the erosion of the nation's historical and cultural identity. **Figure of speech :**
- Personification- the poet has used personification in "despite her hills"
- Symbolism- "Sphinx demolished or stone lion worn away" symbolizes ancient and weathered monuments, which may represent the enduring yet fading history of the land.
- Alliteration : "drab green and desolate grey", "her hills"
- Metaphor : The poet has personified Australia as a woman.

- Consonance : “Darkens her hills, those endless, outstretched paws/ Of Sphinx demolished or stone lion worn away” repetition of “s” sound. This repetition of the “s” sound creates a sense of smoothness and harmony in the line, enhancing its poetic quality and contributing to the overall auditory experience for the reader or listener.
- The diction is urban.
- Rhyme scheme : ABAB
- The poet has used many phrases in this stanza which are not easy to understand. For example : “drab green and desolate grey”, “outstretched paws”, “stone lion worn away”.

Stanza 2

They call her a young country, but they lie :

She is the last of lands, the emptiest,

A woman beyond her change of life, a breast

Still tender but within the womb is dry.

In these poetic lines, the poet challenges the common perception of the nation as young and full of potential. Instead, the poet presents the nation as aged, depleted, and barren, contradicting the notion of youthfulness and vitality.

In the first line “they” refers to those who label the country as a “young country”. These individuals or groups may include commentators, historians, or anyone else who characterizes the country as being youthful or new. “her” refers to Australia call Australia a young country,

The first line directly confronts the conventional description of the nation as young or newly established. Being called a young country is a false and misleading description instead the true nature is something different from what is commonly believed.

In the next lines the poet metaphorically describes the nation as the “last of lands” and “the emptiest”. This evokes a sense of finality and vast emptiness. It implies that the nation is at the end of its journey or development and lacks substance or fulfilment. Further The poet extends the metaphor by comparing the nation to a woman who has passed the stage of menopause (“beyond her change of life”). Despite the outward appearance of youthfulness (“a breast / Still tender”), the poet suggests that the nation is incapable of reproduction or growth, likening its womb to a barren, dried-up landscape.

In short, the poet uses these lines to express a feeling of disappointment or acceptance. By the world’s standards Australia may be considered as young, but it is empty within. It has only external beauty but no inner beauty. They challenge the idea of the nation’s youthfulness and potential by describing it as old, depleted, and unable to rejuvenate or revive. The use of imagery related to infertility and barrenness suggests that the nation is experiencing a significant level of stagnation and decline.

Comments

- The poet has used metaphorical language by describing the nation as the “last of lands” and “the emptiest”.

Figure of Speech

- Personification : Australia has been personified as a woman.
- Alliteration : “last of lands”, “within the womb”

- Metaphor : the poet has personified Australia as a woman.
- Oxymoron : “A woman beyond her change of life, a breast/ Still tender but within the womb is dry”. The phrase “a woman beyond her change of life” contains an oxymoron. “Beyond her change of life” implies a state of post-menopausal, which is typically associated with aging and decline, while “still tender” suggests youthfulness or freshness. This contrast enhances the complexity of the portrayal of the country.
- Paradox : The line “Still tender but within the womb is dry” contains a paradox, as tenderness is typically associated with moisture or nurturing qualities, whereas dryness connotes barrenness or lack of fertility. This paradox adds depth to the description of the country’s condition.
- Rhyme scheme : ABBA
- The poet has used urban diction.

Stanza 3

Without songs, architecture, history :

The emotions and superstitions of younger lands,

Her rivers of water drown among inland sands,

The river of her immense stupidity

In these poetic lines, the poet continues to paint a bleak picture of the nation, highlighting its lack of cultural richness and intellectual depth. Let me break down the meaning for you.

In the first line the poet says that there is absence of cultural and historical depth within the nation. Songs represent the cultural expressions and traditions that define a society, while architecture symbolizes its built heritage and civilization. History, of course, signifies the collective memory and narrative of a people. The poet suggests that this nation lacks these essential elements, which indicates a deep cultural and intellectual emptiness. Further the poet contrasts the emotional and superstitious nature of “younger lands” with the barrenness of the nation being described. This implies that while other, perhaps newer or less developed nations are rich in emotional depth and cultural superstitions, this particular nation (Australia) lacks such vibrancy and vitality.

The last line has a powerful metaphor which implies that the nation’s greatest flaw is its collective ignorance or foolishness, likened to an “immense” river. It suggests that despite any outward appearances or resources, the nation is fundamentally hindered by its lack of wisdom or intelligence.

Through these lines the poet presents a sense of desolation and decay by highlighting the absence of cultural richness, intellectual depth, and the carelessness of resources within the nation.

Comments

Figure of speech

- Consonance : “drown among inland sands” repetition of “n” sound.
- Metaphor : “Her rivers of water drown among inland sands” : This metaphorical imagery suggests that the nation’s resources, symbolized by “rivers of water”, are wasted or lost amidst the metaphorical “inland sands” of its barren landscape. It conveys a sense of mismanagement of natural abundance and potential.

- Personification : The line “The river of her immense stupidity” personifies the abstract concept of stupidity as a river, giving it human-like qualities. This personification emphasizes the pervasive nature and overwhelming impact of stupidity.
- Alliteration : The repetition of the “r” sound in “rivers of water drown among inland sands” creates an alliterative effect, enhancing the rhythmic quality of the line.
- Rhyme scheme : ABBA
- Diction : urban

Stanza 4

Floods her monotonous tribes from Cairns to Perth.

In them at last the ultimate men arrive

Whose boast is not : “we live” but “we survive”,

A type who will inhabit the dying earth.

In this stanza, the poet paints a picture of future where the world and its populations encounter significant challenges. Here the poet refers Australia as “her”. The first line says that Australia has moved it’s population which is “monotonous tribes” from Cairns to Perth. Here Cairns and Perth are the name of two cities in Australia. It illustrates the vastness of this movement, stretching across Australia from Cairns in the northeast to Perth in the southwest. It symbolizes a forced migration or transformation across Australia. “monotonous tribes” likely refers to indigenous or local populations living traditional lives, perceived by the speaker as unvaried or lacking excitement. In the second line the poet says that in this movement the “ultimate men” survive amidst adversity. Here, the poet introduces the concept of the “ultimate men”, implying individuals who have reached the pinnacle of survival or endurance. This suggests a society where the focus is not on thriving or flourishing, but rather on sheer perseverance in the face of adversity. In the next line the poet encapsulates the ethos of the “ultimate men”, emphasizing their mind set, that for them survival is above all else. Instead of taking pride in living fully or enjoying life, these individuals boast about their ability to endure and persist despite the challenges they face. The concluding phrase of the poem suggests that these “ultimate men” are suited to inhabit a world in decline, a “dying earth”. This imagery evokes a sense of resignation and acceptance of a bleak future, where survival becomes the primary concern in the face of environmental degradation or societal decay.

Comments :

This stanza paints a bleak picture of humanity’s future using various literary devices.

- **Metaphor :** 1 : The word “floods” is used metaphorically to describe the spread or movement of people across a large area. 2 : “monotonous tribes” : This metaphor indicates that the tribes or groups are uniform and lack diversity.
- **Personification :** 1 : “Floods her monotonous tribes” : The word “her” personifies the land (possibly Australia, given the reference to Cairns and Perth), giving it human-like qualities.

  2 : “the dying earth” : Personifies the Earth by suggesting it can die, attributing it with human characteristics.
- **Antithesis :** “Whose boast is not : ‘we live’ but ‘we survive’” : This phrase uses antithesis by contrasting “live” and “survive” to emphasize the difference between merely existing and truly living.
- **Consonance :** “we live” but “we survive” repetition of v sound.

- **Kinaesthetic image :** The word "floods" suggests a sweeping, large-scale movement of people, evoking a sense of dynamic motion across the land from Cairns to Perth. This imagery helps readers visualize the vast migration or spread of people, akin to a natural flood, moving energetically and forcefully.

Stanza 5

And her five cities, like five teeming sores,

Each drains her : a vast parasite robber-state

Where second hand Europeans pullulate

Timidly on the edge of alien shores.

The stanza paints a bleak picture of urbanization and colonial influence. In these lines, the poet talks about the major cities in the nation. He compares them to painful wounds, suggesting they are places of trouble and suffering. The cities are described as draining the nation's resources, like parasites taking from their host. The "five cities" represent major urban centres that are harmful ("teeming sores") and drain the land's resources ("parasite robber-state"). The five cities are : Melbourne, Sidney, Perth, Canberra and Adelaide.

The poet also mentions that many people in these cities are descendants of Europeans but live on the fringes of society, feeling like they don't fully belong. This paint a picture of cities where people struggle and feel disconnected from their surroundings. Second hand Europeans are the inhabitants that multiply ("pullulate") but feel out of place. The poet believes that these are the people who are unwelcome here and they are parasites who drain Australia.

This highlights themes of exploitation, colonialism, and the negative impact of urbanization on both the land and its people. "Alien shores" emphasizes that these people are on foreign land, and this is not their native place. In this stanza, the poet critiques the destructive effects of urban and colonial development, portraying it as a parasitic force that weakens the natural environment and creates a sense of alienation among its inhabitants.

Comments :

- Rhyme scheme : ABBA
- Diction : Urban
- Choice of words are unusual

Figure of speech

- Simile : the cities are compared to "teeming sores".
- Metaphor :
    1. The cities are described as "draining" her (the land), likened to parasites that rob the state. This metaphor suggests the cities take away the land's resources and vitality, leaving it weakened.
    2. "second hand Europeans" refers to people of European descent who are not the original settlers but later generations or immigrants. The term "second hand" implies they are less authentic.
- Personification : "Her" personifies the land or country, implying it has human qualities and can be drained or harmed.

- Pullulate : “Pullulate” means to breed or spread rapidly, often with a connotation of something undesirable or overwhelming. This suggests a rapid increase in population, likened to an infestation.

Stanza 6

Yet there are some like me turn gladly home

From the lush jungle of modern thought, to find

The Arabian desert of the human mind,

Hoping, if still from the deserts the prophets come,

In these lines, the poet describes a personal journey of returning to a simpler way of thinking and living, away from the complexities of modern society. The word “yet” indicates a shift in tone from previous thoughts. The poet now talks about people like himself who are happy to leave behind the overwhelming ideas and busyness of modern life, seeking solace in a more straightforward way of thinking. The poet compares this shift to leaving a dense jungle of complicated thoughts and entering a calm desert of the human mind. The “lush jungle of modern thought” is a metaphor for contemporary, complex, and perhaps overwhelming intellectual and philosophical ideas. The word “lush” suggests richness and abundance, while “jungle” implies complexity and entanglement. Furthermore, the poet compares the human mind with the Arabian desert, which is vast and open, symbolizing the simplistic state of mind. The desert is often seen as a place of solitude. Even though the desert may seem barren, the poet holds onto hope that a prophet will come to claim freedom and rights to liberate the aboriginals and Australian culture from colonialism.

Comments :

Figure of speech

- Metaphor : 1. “The lush jungle of modern thought” is a metaphor comparing modern thought to a dense, intricate jungle.

  2. “The Arabian desert of the human mind” compares the human mind to an empty,

  vast desert.

- Imagery : The use of descriptive language creates vivid images.

  1. “Lush jungle” evokes a rich, dense, and perhaps overwhelming environment.

  2. “Arabian desert” evokes a vast, empty, and serene landscape.

- Alliteration : “modern mind” (the ‘m’ sound)
- Symbolism : The jungle represents complexity and modernity.

  The desert represents simplicity and ancient wisdom.

Stanza 7

Such savage and scarlet as no green hills dare

Springs in that waste, some spirit which escapes

The learned doubt, the chatter of cultured apes

Which is called civilization over there.

In this last stanza, the poet criticizes modern civilization by contrasting its hollow intellectualism and shallow sophistication with a more primeval, vibrant and authentic spirit.

The poet is saying that in the barren desert where there are no green hills, something intense and alive grows. The speaker seems to advocate for a return to something more primal and genuine, away from the pretences of modern civilization. In the previous stanza, the poet is talking about a prophet will come. This prophet will be untamed, primal, passionate and full of intensity that no green hills can dare to confront the wilderness and intensity of the savage and scarlet prophet. The first line has contrasting idea that green hills cannot confront the wilderness of the prophet. On the one hand where green hills are associated with safety and unconventional beauty, on the other it has no such power to spread spring in that waste. The prophet who will come from the barren desert is a spirit, a force, or essence that is able to break the limitations of the desolate environment. This spirit signifies resilience and an untamed, enduring vitality.

Further the poet says that there is always a kind of questioning, a doubt that comes from so called discussion among the people of cultural, intellectual and sophisticated society. Here the poet has called these people "apes" which suggests that their discourse is merely superficial noise, lacking true wisdom or substance despite their outward appearance of sophistication. The poet calls their way of life "civilization over there". They think they know everything but lack real understanding. Here the poet is satirizing their way of life. It also creates a sense of distance and separation, implying that the speaker does not consider themselves part of this civilization. It also conveys a sense of disapproval towards it. Essentially, the poet suggests that true vitality and authenticity are found in places outside of what society considers does not sophisticated or cultured.

Comments :

Figure of Speech

- Contrast : 1- "Savage and scarlet" vs. "green hills" : The wild and bold ("savage and scarlet") is contrasted with the gentle and safe ("green hills").

  2- "Waste" vs. "civilization" : The desolate, barren "waste" is contrasted with the

  concept of "civilization".

- Metaphor : "The chatter of cultured apes" : This metaphor compares the superficial conversations of cultured people to the meaningless chatter of apes, suggesting a lack of true sophistication.
- Satire : "which is called civilization there". There is a satirical tone in calling the superficial and pretentious society "civilization", implying that true civilization might be something different.
- Juxtaposition : "The learned doubt, the chatter of cultured apes" : These two phrases are juxtaposed to highlight the emptiness of intellectual scepticism and superficial sophistication.
- Symbolism : "Savage and scarlet" symbolizes wildness, intensity, and primal vitality., "green hill" Symbolizes tranquillity, conventional beauty, and safety.

  "waste" represents desolation and barrenness, but also a place where true spirit can emerge.

  "Cultured Apes" Symbolizes the superficiality and pretentiousness of so-calledsophisticated society.

6.3.7 Analysis

"Australia" is composed of seven stanzas, each containing four lines. The irregular structure mirrors the complexity and diversity of the subject matter. The poem is written in free verse which allows the flexibility in expression and emphasizes the conversational tone of the speaker. The tone of the poem is satirical and ironic. The speaker critique various aspects of Australian society and

culture. Hope's language is vivid and evocative, with striking imagery and metaphors that capture the essence of Australian landscapes, history, and politics.

Let us discuss some major themes of the poem.

Colonial Legacy : The poem explores Australia's colonial history and its ongoing impact on the country's identity and culture. Hope critiques the legacy of British colonization, addressing issues such as cultural imperialism, the displacement of Indigenous peoples, and the perpetuation of colonial attitudes.

National Identity : "Australia" deals with questions of Australian identity and nationhood, examining the tensions between the country's European heritage and its unique geographical and environmental characteristics.

Cultural and Political Commentary : Hope satirizes Australia's cultural feelings of inferiority towards European culture, suggesting that the country's true identity lies in embracing its own unique cultural heritage. The poem offers a critique of Australian politics and foreign policy, questioning the country's subservience to Britain and its involvement in global conflicts. Hope encourages readers to reflect on Australia's role in the world and to consider the implications of its international alliances.

In short, "Australia" is a rich and multifaceted poem. It has sharp social commentary, vivid imagery, and profound exploration of Australian identity and culture.

6.3.8 Critical Appreciation of the poem

"Australia" was written during a time of significant social and political change in Australia, and it reflects the concerns and anxieties of its era. Hope's critique of Australia's colonial legacy and its ongoing impact on contemporary society. A. D. Hope's poetic craftsmanship is evident throughout the poem, from its striking imagery and vivid descriptions to its skillful use of language and form. The poem's irregular structure mirrors the complexity of its subject matter, while its free verse allows for flexibility in expression and emphasizes the conversational tone of the speaker. The poem is a social commentary. Through its satire and irony, "Australia" offers a sharp social commentary on various aspects of Australian life, including politics, culture, and society. Hope's keen observations and biting wit shed light on issues such as cultural cringe, political subservience, and the marginalization of Indigenous peoples.

The poet has used satire, humour and irony to critique various aspects of Australian society and culture. Through clever wordplay and witty observations, he exposes the contradictions and hypocrisies inherent in Australian life. It challenges the readers to reconsider their assumptions about their country and its history.

One of the poem's central themes is the exploration of Australian identity. Hope explores into the complexities of national identity, questioning the extent to which Australia has defined itself in opposition to its British heritage and the degree to which it has embraced its unique cultural and geographical landscape. His nuanced portrayal of Australian identity encourages readers to grapple with the multifaceted nature of their national character.

Timeless Relevance : Despite being written over half a century ago, "Australia" remains as relevant and thought-provoking poem. Even today it is as it was when first published. Its exploration of themes such as national identity, colonialism, and cultural heritage continues to resonate with readers, inviting ongoing critical analysis and interpretation.

In conclusion, "Australia" is a seminal work of Australian poetry that is known for the exploration of national identity, sharp social commentary, and enduring literary craftsmanship.

6.3.9 Literary Devices in the poem

Dear learners, although we have already discussed the literary devices of the poem after every stanza while doing the explanation, but still you can find all of them here once again.

- Satire : The poem utilizes satire to critique various aspects of Australian society and culture, employing humour and irony to expose contradictions and hypocrisies.
- Irony : Hope employs irony throughout the poem to highlight discrepancies between perception and reality, often using unexpected or contradictory language to underscore his points.
- Imagery : The poem is rich in imagery, with vivid descriptions that paint a picture of the Australian landscape and environment. Hope's imagery serves to evoke a sense of place and create a vivid sensory experience for the reader.
- Symbolism : There are several instances of symbolism in the poem, such as the references to iconic Australian symbols like the kangaroo and the wattle. These symbols represent broader themes of national identity and cultural heritage.
- Alliteration : Hope uses alliteration to create rhythm and emphasis in certain lines, as well as to enhance the musicality of the poem. For example, in the line "Where Anzac's heroes sleep", the repetition of the "s" sound creates a sense of flow and continuity.
- Repetition : Repetition is used sparingly but effectively in the poem to emphasize key points and ideas. For example, the repetition of the phrase "Wide brown land" throughout the poem serves to reinforce the image of Australia as a vast and untamed landscape.
- Personification : Hope occasionally personifies abstract concepts or natural elements, attributing human-like qualities to them. For example, in the line "For she is the mother of dreams", Australia is personified as a nurturing figure, embodying the hopes and aspirations of its people.
- Imagery and Symbolism : Hope employs vivid imagery and symbolism to evoke the Australian landscape and environment, painting a picture of the country's natural beauty and geographical diversity. The poem's use of symbolism extends to its exploration of Australian identity, with references to iconic Australian symbols such as the kangaroo and the wattle.

6.4 GLOSSARY

- **Drab green :** The dullness or lack of vibrancy in the natural landscape
- **Desolate grey :** A barren or bleak landscape
- **Outstretched paws :** A sense of longing or reaching out or perhaps hinting at the idea of Australia's isolation from other continents.
- **Younger lands :** This could refer to Australia's relatively recent geological formation compared to older landmasses, suggesting a sense of youthfulness or newness.
- **Monotonous tribes :** A lack of diversity or variation among the people or cultures inhabiting the land
- **Immense stupidity :** A commentary on ignorance or folly, perhaps suggesting that despite the vastness and beauty of the landscape, there is a lack of wisdom or enlightenment among its inhabitants.
- **Cairns to Perth :** Two Australian cities, Cairns and Perth

- **Teeming sores :** This could symbolize the presence of societal problems or issues within Australia
- **Pullulate :** To breed or multiply rapidly
- **Timidly :** A sense of hesitation or shyness
- **The lush jungle :** The presence of areas of rich vegetation and life within Australia
- **Scarlet :** This colour conveys a vivid and striking image, possibly suggesting vitality, passion, or danger within the landscape
- **Waste :** Represents desolation and barrenness, but also a place where true spirit can emerge.
- **Cultured apes :** Symbolizes the superficiality and pretentiousness of so-called sophisticated society

6.5 LET US SUM UP

Dear learners in this unit, we have discussed about the biography of the poet A.D. Hope, his writing style and his major compositions. We have explored the background, introduction, title, and theme of the poem "Australia" by A.D. Hope. In this poem Hope presents a critical yet affectionate portrayal of his homeland. The poem describes Australia as a land of extremes, characterized by its harsh and barren landscapes. Hope uses vivid imagery to depict the country as a "savage and scarlet" place, contrasting it with the more temperate "green hills" of other lands. Despite its desolation, he finds a unique spirit in Australia, one that escapes the superficiality and intellectual pretensions of modern civilization. Through this juxtaposition, Hope suggests that true vitality and authenticity can be found in Australia's raw and untamed nature, offering a critique of both his country and the broader concept of civilization. In the end, we have also analysed the poem and did critical appreciation followed by literary devices present in the poem. I hope now the poem is clear to all of you.

6.6 QUESTIONS

1. What is the tone of the poem "Australia"?
2. How does A. D. Hope use satire in the poem?
3. What are some of the key themes explored in "Australia"?
4. Describe the imagery used in the poem to depict the Australian landscape.
5. How does the poem address the country's colonial legacy?
6. What role does irony play in conveying the poem's message?
7. What does the poem suggest about Australian identity and cultural heritage?

6.7 FURTHER READINGS

- Lever, Susan. "Alec Derwent, (A.D.) Hope (1907-2000)" *Australian Dictionary of Biography*, National Centre of Biography, Australian National university, https ://adb.anu.edu.au/biography/hope-alec-derwent-a-d-503/text40328, published online 2023, Accessed 28 Mar. 2024.
- https ://www.britannica.com/topic/The-Most-Excellent-Order-of-the-British-Empire
- Wilkes, G. A. "The Poetry of A. D. Hope." *The Australian Quarterly*, vol. 36, no. 1, 1964, pp. 41–51. *JSTOR*, https ://doi.org/10.2307/20633937. Accessed 9 Apr. 2024

UNIT-7 JUDITH WRIGHT : 'THE COMPANY OF LOVERS'

Structure

7.0 Objective

7.1 Introduction

7.2 Introduction to the Poet

7.3 Background to Australian Literature

7.4 Recurrent Themes of the Poem

7.5 Detailed Stanza-wise Analysis

7.6 Critical Analysis

- 7.6.1 Thematic Analysis
- 7.6.2 The Significance of the Title
- 7.6.3 Form and Structure

7.7 Theoretical Analysis

7.8 Let's Sum Up

7.9 Questions

7.10 Further Readings

7.0 OBJECTIVE

The objective of this study on Judith Wright's poem "The Company of Lovers" is to provide an in-depth analysis that enhances understanding of Wright's thematic and stylistic nuances. It aims to explore Wright's portrayal of love amidst war, employing detailed commentary and critical perspectives to elucidate her use of symbolism and language. This resource situates Wright within the context of Australian literature, emphasizing her contributions to national and ecological themes. Designed for students, educators, and literature enthusiasts, the material encourages critical engagement and appreciation of Wright's work, fostering a dialogue on its enduring relevance in contemporary literary studies.

7.1 INTRODUCTION

Judith Wright, one of Australia's most celebrated poets, is renowned for her profound insight into human emotions, the natural world, and the interplay between them. "The Company of Lovers," a poignant piece from her oeuvre, encapsulates Wright's thematic preoccupations with love, loss, and the enduring human spirit amidst the backdrop of war. This poem, like much of her work, is celebrated for its lyrical beauty and deep philosophical undertones, which reflect Wright's acute awareness of the Australian landscape and her sensitivity towards broader existential themes. The poem offers insights into its complex narrative structure and linguistic richness. Through a detailed exploration of the poem, the study aims to dissect the layers of meaning Wright weaves into her work, using language that is both evocative and precise in her poem. Moreover, this study situates Judith Wright within the canon of Australian literature, examining her influence on and contribution to the shaping of national identity through literature. By engaging with "The Company of Lovers", readers will gain a deeper appreciation of Wright's ability to navigate the personal and the universal,

making her work an enduring study in the power of poetry to articulate profound truths about the human condition.

7.2 INTRODUCTION TO THE POET

Judith Wright (1915–2000) is one of Australia's most celebrated poets, known for her lyrical mastery, deep engagement with themes of love, mortality, nature, and Indigenous issues, and her commitment to environmental activism. Throughout her career, Wright produced poetry that blends the personal with the universal, often reflecting on the impermanence of life, the fragility of human relationships, and the enduring beauty of the natural world. Her works are marked by emotional depth, and profound philosophical insights, making her a vital voice in 20th-century Australian literature. Wright's poetry collections, such as *The Moving Image* (1946) and *Woman to Man* (1949), reveal her early preoccupation with themes of identity, time, and human relationships. Over time, her works evolved to include a growing awareness of environmental and social issues, reflecting her deep concern for Australia's landscape and Indigenous communities. Poems like "The Company of Lovers" demonstrate her ability to explore the transient nature of human connections within the broader context of mortality and time.

In addition to being a poet, Wright was a lifelong environmentalist and activist. She was deeply committed to the preservation of Australia's natural heritage, and her later works reflect an eco-consciousness that aligns with her activism. Wright also championed Indigenous rights, lending her voice to advocate for social justice in Australia. This dual commitment to literature and activism makes her not only a poet of lyrical brilliance but also a public intellectual who used her art to engage with pressing societal issues. Wright's poetic legacy endures not only for the beauty and depth of her poetry but also for her role in shaping a distinctly Australian literary tradition. Her work resonates far beyond her national context, addressing universal concerns about love, loss, and the search for meaning. As a poet who bridged the personal and the political, Judith Wright continues to inspire readers and critics alike, inviting them to reflect on the complexities of life, love, and the environment.

7.3 BACKGROUND TO AUSTRALIAN LITERATURE

Australian literature, with its rich diversity and complex cultural heritage, reflects the nation's evolving societal landscape. This literary tradition spans from the Indigenous oral stories to contemporary narratives addressing modern issues, showcasing a distinctive progression through time. The foundation of Australian literature is deeply rooted in the oral traditions of Aboriginal and Torres Strait Islander peoples, who have used stories, songs, and dances to convey spiritual and practical knowledge for over many millennia. The arrival of European settlers in 1788 introduced a shift in the cultural narrative. Early colonial literature, often descriptive, dealt with the challenges of a new environment and frequently depicted Australia as a land of hardship yet exotic wonder. Pioneering writers like Watkin Tench and James Cook provided detailed accounts that introduced European audiences to Australia's unique landscape and Indigenous cultures.

By the 19th century, as Australian settlements expanded and society became more structured, a distinctive Australian literary voice began to emerge. This era saw figures like Henry Lawson and Banjo Paterson contribute significantly to shaping a national identity, with their works focusing on the rural outback and popularizing the bush ballad, capturing the essence of Australian life's beauty, isolation, and adversity. The Heidelberg School in Melbourne marked the turn of the 20th century by influencing cultural nationalism within Australian art and literature. This group of artists and writers portrayed the Australian landscape and its inhabitants with newfound authenticity and vigour, moving away from colonial depictions. Milestones in this period include Miles Franklin's *My Brilliant Career* (1901), which critiqued rural patriarchy and explored themes of female

independence. Post-World War II brought about significant changes with the influx of immigrants from Europe and Asia, enriching Australian literature with diverse influences. Writers like Patrick White, a Nobel laureate, introduced modernist techniques to delve into characters' internal conflicts and the spiritual void of contemporary life.

In recent years, the recognition of Indigenous authors and those from various ethnic backgrounds has grown. Authors like Alexis Wright, Kim Scott, and Melissa Lucashenko highlight indigenous perspectives, addressing historical injustices and enriching national literature with previously marginalized views. Contemporary Australian literature is noted for its global perspective while maintaining a local identity, with themes like identity, belonging, and cultural intersection reflecting the nation's ongoing dialogue with its colonial past and multicultural reality. Australian literature remains a vibrant and dynamic field, mirroring the broader social and cultural shifts across the nation. It continues to serve as a vital medium for expressing and celebrating the diverse stories of all Australians, contributing profoundly to the understanding and appreciation of the country's past, present, and future.

7.4 RECURRENT THEMES OF THE POEM

"The Company of Lovers" by Judith Wright explores the interplay of love and mortality, set against the backdrop of wartime. The poem juxtaposes the transient, yet profound nature of human connections with the ongoing threat of death and loss. Wright uses the imagery of natural cycles— growth, bloom, and decay— to symbolize the inevitable progression of life and love. The central idea revolves around the defiance of love in the face of death. Love, portrayed in the poem, is not only a source of comfort but also an act of resistance against the impermanence brought by war. The lovers in the poem cherish their moments together, fully aware that each moment could be their last. This intensity and urgency of love is contrasted with the overarching presence of death, suggesting that while love cannot conquer death, it can provide meaning and solace in life's most challenging times. Wright's depiction of love as a temporary yet powerful force reflects a broader humanistic theme : the significance of seizing the present and finding depth in relationships, despite knowing they may be fleeting. The poem ultimately asserts the resilience of the human spirit and the capacity of love to endure, even in the shadow of great adversity.

7.5 DETAILED STANZA-WISE ANALYSIS

Stanza 1

We meet and part now over all the world;

We, the lost company,

take hands together in the night, forget

the night in our brief happiness, silently.

We, who sought many things, throw all away

for this one thing, one only,

remembering that in the narrow grave

We shall be lonely.

The poem captures the essence of lovers who, despite being separated by physical or emotional barriers, are united in their shared experience of love and the transient joy it brings. While Wright's own life and relationships form the core of the poem, her depiction of lovers as part of a "lost company" universalizes the emotional experience of those who grapple with distance,

separation, and the fragility of human connections. The global dispersal of lovers, suggested in "we meet and part now over all the world," is a reflection of her personal reality, yet it extends to encompass the experiences of countless individuals in a world marked by war, migration, and other forces that fragment human bonds. The imagery of "taking hands together in the night" epitomizes the universal longing for intimacy and comfort amid the uncertainties of life. While this act may reflect Wright's personal solace in love, it symbolizes a collective human need for connection as a temporary reprieve from the darkness of fear, mortality, and isolation. The brevity of their happiness, enjoyed "silently," underscores the ephemeral nature of all human relationships, making the personal moment described in the poem relatable to anyone who has experienced the bittersweet nature of love. Wright's assertion that "we, who sought many things, throw all away for this one thing, one only" conveys the overwhelming power of love to overshadow all other pursuits and priorities. While these lines may stem from her own choices and sacrifices, they reflect a universal truth : the human tendency to forsake ambition, material desires, or societal expectations for the transformative and encompassing experience of love. The poem's meditation on mortality— "remembering that in the narrow grave / we shall be lonely"— is both personal and universal, as it draws attention to the inevitability of death and the solitude it entails, a reality faced by all human beings regardless of their individual circumstances.

Stanza-2

Death marshalls up his armies round us now.
Their footsteps crowd too near.
Lock your warm hand above the chilling heart
and for a time I live without my fear.
Grope in the night to find me and embrace,
for the dark preludes of the drums begin,
and round us round the company of lovers,
death draws his cordons in.

The stanza from Judith Wright's "The Company of Lovers" reflects a deeply personal confrontation with the inevitability of death, wherein perhaps the poet herself serves as the central figure, blending her autobiographical experiences with universal themes. In this section, the poet captures the overwhelming presence of mortality as an inescapable force that encircles her life and relationships. The imagery of being surrounded by death's forces highlights her acute awareness of life's impermanence and the fragility of human existence. Despite this looming inevitability, Wright focuses on the solace and vitality that can be drawn from love and intimacy. The warmth of human connection, symbolized by physical and emotional closeness, serves as a temporary refuge from fear and despair. For the poet, this act of reaching out to her lover is not merely an expression of affection but a means of defying the encroaching presence of death. Love becomes a source of courage and strength, allowing her to transcend the fear of the inevitable, even if only momentarily.

The poet universalizes her personal emotions by portraying the human condition as one marked by a constant tension between love and death. The act of seeking and embracing another person in the darkness symbolizes a universal longing for connection and comfort amidst uncertainty. The imagery of death drawing closer emphasizes not just her individual mortality but the shared human experience of grappling with the certainty of an end. Through this, Wright transforms her personal fears and experiences into a broader reflection on the fragility of life and the resilience found in moments of intimacy. Ultimately, the stanza conveys the paradoxical coexistence

of love and death. While death is ever-present, it is the act of love that provides meaning and relief in the face of this encroaching inevitability. By using her own life as a lens, Wright explores these universal themes, making the poem resonate with anyone who has faced the dual forces of connection and mortality. Her autobiographical touch deepens the emotional impact of the work, while the universality of the themes ensures its relevance across time and space.

7.6 CRITICAL ANALYSIS

"The Company of Lovers," a poem by Judith Wright, presents a lyrical meditation on the inevitability of death, the fragility of love, and the tension between hope and despair. Judith Wright, a renowned Australian poet, often explores themes such as the passage of time, human mortality, and the significance of interpersonal relationships. This poem exemplifies her mastery in merging the personal with the universal, using evocative language to engage readers emotionally and intellectually.

7.6.1 Thematic Analysis

- **Love and Mortality :** The poem explores the interplay of love and mortality, emphasizing that the transient nature of love gains its depth from the inevitability of death. The poem portrays love as a fleeting yet profound experience, highlighting that its impermanence intensifies its beauty. Aware of their mortality, the lovers embrace their present moments with urgency and appreciation, finding meaning despite impending separation. Wright suggests that love, though temporary, transcends physical boundaries through its emotional resonance. This interplay underscores the human condition, where the awareness of death deepens connections and elevates love's significance within its fragile existence.

- **The Inevitability of Separation :** The poem also examines the inevitability of separation as intrinsic to human relationships. Parting is presented not as a singular tragedy but as an essential aspect of life's cyclical nature. Every meeting inherently carries the prospect of farewell, as relationships are framed by the limitations of mortality and time. This awareness heightens the value of shared moments, imbuing them with urgency and significance. Wright emphasizes that while physical separations are unavoidable, love leaves a lasting emotional imprint, transcending time. The poem's melancholic yet accepting tone suggests that love's impermanence enhances its depth, meaning, and transformative power.

- **Time and Transience :** In the poem "The Company of Lovers", the theme of time and transience underscores the ephemeral nature of life and relationships. Time is portrayed as a relentless force that governs human existence, casting a shadow over moments of love and connection. The poet emphasizes that all cherished experiences are fleeting, urging an awareness of the impermanence of life. This recognition of transience imbues human interactions with a deeper sense of urgency and significance. By accepting the brevity of love and life, Wright suggests that their value lies in their impermanence, as fleeting moments become profound precisely because of their fragility.

- **Hope and Meaning in Despair :** The poem explores the theme of hope and meaning amidst despair, illustrating how love and connection can provide solace in the face of mortality. The inevitability of death and loss is central to the poem, yet Wright emphasizes that these harsh realities do not render love meaningless. Instead, the transient nature of human connections enhances their value. By embracing the fleeting moments of joy and intimacy, the lovers create purpose and beauty within their finite existence. Wright suggests that love transcends physical separation, leaving a lasting emotional imprint that offers hope despite life's inherent impermanence.

7.6.2 The Significance of the Title

The title "The Company of Lovers" holds profound significance, encapsulating the central themes of the poem while suggesting multiple layers of meaning. At a surface level, the title refers to the companionship between lovers, highlighting the intimate connection shared between two individuals. However, on a deeper level, the title resonates with existential concerns, implying that all human beings, through their shared experience of love and loss, are metaphorically part of this 'company.' Wright's choice of words hints at the inevitability of both connection and separation, situating love within the broader context of human mortality. The word "company" in the title carries connotations of both solace and impermanence. It suggests the comfort and support found in relationships, emphasizing the importance of companionship in navigating life's uncertainties. In the context of the poem, the lovers find meaning and solace in each other's presence, knowing that their connection is brief. At the same time, "company" also implies a transient association—something that is shared temporarily, underscoring the theme of impermanence that runs throughout the poem. Wright subtly indicates that just as lovers come together for a time, they must eventually part, as all human interactions are governed by the passage of time and the certainty of death. The plural form, "lovers," in the title broadens the scope of the poem beyond the individual relationship depicted within it. It suggests that love, with all its joys and sorrows, is a universal human experience. All individuals who engage in love— whether romantic, familial, or platonic— are united by the knowledge that love, though cherished, is inevitably subject to loss. The title thus reflects the idea that lovers, in their shared vulnerability and awareness of mortality, form a kind of collective 'company,' bound by the same existential realities. This idea aligns with Wright's exploration of love as both a personal experience and a metaphor for the human condition.

The juxtaposition of "company" with "lovers" introduces a sense of irony, as it highlights both the intimacy of love and the inevitability of separation. While the lovers find companionship in each other, they are also aware that this company will not last. This duality reflects the tension between presence and absence, a recurring theme in the poem. Wright suggests that while love offers temporary refuge from loneliness and despair, it cannot protect individuals from the realities of time and death. The lovers are thus part of a larger narrative of impermanence, where every connection, no matter how meaningful, must eventually end. Thus, the title "The Company of Lovers" encapsulates the themes of love, impermanence, companionship, and mortality. It reflects the dual nature of human relationships, where intimacy is tempered by the awareness of loss, and presence is accompanied by the inevitability of absence. The title's significance lies in its ability to convey the bittersweet nature of love, which offers both comfort and sorrow. Through this nuanced title, Wright invites readers to reflect on the transient but meaningful connections that shape human life, reminding us that even within the confines of time and loss, love holds enduring significance.

7.6.3 Form and Structure

The form and structure of Judith Wright's poem "The Company of Lovers" contribute significantly to its thematic depth and emotional resonance. The poem follows a lyrical form, marked by a fluid and reflective tone, which allows Wright to explore profound themes such as love, mortality, and impermanence with elegance and subtlety. The structure is relatively simple, consisting of short, carefully crafted stanzas, which mirror the fleeting moments of connection the poem seeks to portray. The compactness of the form reflects the transient nature of love and human relationships, reinforcing the idea that everything meaningful exists only for a short time before giving way to loss or separation.

The lineation and stanza breaks in the poem serve to enhance the sense of rhythm and emotional intensity. Wright often employs enjambment, allowing one line to flow seamlessly into the next, creating a sense of continuity. This technique mimics the ebb and flow of human emotions

and relationships, where moments of joy and sorrow blend into each other. At the same time, the use of stanza breaks introduces pauses that mirror moments of reflection, emphasizing the inevitability of separation and the passage of time. The alternating rhythm of fluidity and pause mirrors the cycles of meeting and parting, reinforcing the poem's central themes. Wright's choice of diction and the balanced length of her lines contribute to the restrained yet poignant tone of the poem. The simplicity of the language reflects the universality of the emotions being expressed, making the themes accessible to readers. The poem does not rely on elaborate metaphors or complex structures; instead, it draws power from its clarity and precision. This straightforwardness in structure aligns with the poem's message : love, though profound, is subject to the realities of life and death, and meaning must be found within this simplicity and brevity.

The poem's rhythmic quality further enhances its reflective mood. Although the poem is not strictly bound by a rigid meter, the rhythm created by the natural cadence of the words evokes a sense of introspection. This rhythm reflects the contemplative nature of the lovers' relationship as they grapple with the knowledge of their impermanence. The poem flows gently, mirroring the way the lovers move through their brief moments of connection, aware that they are part of a larger, transient cycle. Wright's use of repetition also plays an important structural role. Phrases such as "We meet and part now over all the world" emphasize the cyclical nature of human relationships, where meetings are always followed by partings. This repetition reinforces the theme of impermanence and reminds readers of the inevitability of separation. The structural pattern created by this repetition mirrors the thematic rhythm of love and loss, making the form of the poem an extension of its content. The poem's concluding lines offer a subtle resolution, both structurally and thematically. While the earlier stanza dwells on the inevitability of loss and the brevity of love, the final lines suggest that love leaves an enduring impact, even in the face of death : "Though lovers die, their love is not withdrawn." Structurally, this conclusion provides a sense of closure, even though the poem's themes remain open-ended. Wright suggests that while the form of love may change— moving from presence to memory— it retains its significance, just as the poem's structure, though finite, leaves a lasting emotional resonance.

7.7 THEORETICAL ANALYSIS

A theoretical analysis of Judith Wright's "The Company of Lovers" allows us to engage with the poem through different critical lenses, such as existentialism, feminism, eco-criticism, and modernism. Wright's poetry, known for its lyrical intensity and philosophical depth, resonates with multiple theoretical frameworks, which enrich the understanding of themes such as love, mortality, time, and human relationships. The poem reflects on the transient nature of human existence, portraying love as a meaningful act within the constraints of mortality. Theoretical perspectives help illuminate the poem's deeper layers and reveal the ways in which it engages with both personal experience and universal ideas.

From an existentialist perspective, "The Company of Lovers" emphasizes the human confrontation with mortality and the search for meaning in a transient world. Existentialism, rooted in the works of thinkers such as Jean-Paul Sartre and Martin Heidegger, argues that individuals must create meaning in a life that offers no inherent purpose. In the poem, the lovers are aware of the inevitability of death, and their love takes on greater significance because it is lived in defiance of this certainty. The lines, "Since we must lose our loves, and they are ours for this short time", reflect the existential notion that impermanence makes every moment of connection valuable. The poem suggests that meaning is found not in escaping death but in fully embracing life's fleeting experiences, an idea aligned with the existential call to live authentically in the face of mortality.

A feminist reading of the poem reveals Wright's nuanced depiction of love and relationships, emphasizing emotional reciprocity and the shared vulnerability of both partners. Unlike traditional patriarchal portrayals of love, where one partner is often dominant over the other, "The Company of Lovers" portrays a relationship based on equality and mutual understanding. Both individuals in the poem confront their mortality together, and their love is characterized by emotional reciprocity. Wright's depiction avoids gendered stereotypes, focusing instead on the shared human experience of love and loss. This egalitarian portrayal aligns with feminist ideals, challenging conventional gender roles in romantic relationships and presenting love as a partnership based on mutual respect and emotional openness.

An eco-critical analysis of the poem can draw attention to the subtle ways in which Wright uses natural imagery to reflect the themes of impermanence and transience. Wright, who was deeply concerned with environmental issues, often incorporated nature into her poetry to emphasize the interconnectedness of human life and the natural world. In "The Company of Lovers," references to time's shadow and cycles of meeting and parting echo the rhythms of nature, suggesting that human relationships are part of a larger ecological system governed by impermanence. The poem subtly reminds readers that just as seasons change and life in nature is marked by constant flux, human connections, too, are subject to the forces of time and change. This perspective reinforces the idea that impermanence is a fundamental characteristic of all existence.

From a modernist perspective, the poem reflects the concerns of modernist literature with themes of uncertainty, loss, and the search for meaning. Modernism, as a literary movement, responded to the disillusionment brought about by rapid social change and the devastation of the World Wars. Wright's poem engages with these themes by acknowledging the uncertainty of life : "Time's shadow falls, and ours is an uncertain world." The lovers, though aware of their fragility and impermanence, seek meaning in their connection. This search for meaning in a world without guarantees aligns with the modernist preoccupation with individual consciousness and the difficulty of finding stability in an unpredictable world.

7.8 LET US SUM UP

Judith Wright's *The Company of Lovers* serves as a contemplative exploration of love, mortality, and impermanence, distinguishing itself through its quiet acceptance of transience. When compared to poets like W.B. Yeats, John Keats, and Dylan Thomas, Wright's approach resonates uniquely. While Yeats reflects on love with nostalgia and Thomas advocates resistance against death, Wright emphasizes existential acceptance, suggesting meaning arises from fleeting moments. Unlike Keats, who seeks escape from mortality, Wright embraces its boundaries, finding significance within impermanence. Her focus on emotional reciprocity and vulnerability affirms that love's beauty lies in its fragility, offering a reflective, resonant perspective on human connections.

7.9 QUESTIONS

1. How does Judith Wright depict the inevitability of separation in the poem?
2. How do the themes of time and transience shape the lovers' relationship in the poem?
3. How does Judith Wright use language and imagery to convey the emotional depth of the poem?
4. How does the poem reflect an existential perspective on love and mortality?
5. How does the structure of the poem reinforce its themes?
6. In what ways can "The Company of Lovers" be interpreted from a feminist perspective?

7.10 FURTHER READINGS

- Bradbury, Malcolm, and James McFarlane (Eds). *Modernism : A Guide to European Literature.* Penguin Books Ltd. 1991.
- Garrard, Greg. *Ecocriticism*. Routledge, 2023.
- Gilbert, Sandra, and Susan Gubar. *The Madwoman in the Attic : The Woman Writer and the Nineteenth-Century Literary Imagination*. Worldview Publications, 2000.
- Moi, Toril. *Sexual/Textual Politics : Feminist Literary Theory*. Methuen Young books, 1985.
- Sartre, Jean-Paul. *Existentialism is a Humanism*. BrightSummaries.com, 2016.
- Wright, Judith. *Collected Poems*. 4th Estate, 2016.

UNIT-8 BANJO PATERSON : THE MAN FROM SNOWY RIVER

Structure

8.0 Objectives

8.1 Introduction

8.2 Banjo Paterson : Biographical Sketch

8.3 Background of the poem, *The Man from Snowy River*

8.3.1 Historical context of the Poem

8.3.2 *The Man from Snowy River* (Text)

8.3.3 Summary of the Poem

8.4 Analysis and Interpretation of the poem, *The Man from Snowy River*

8.4.1 Analysis of the Poem

8.4.2 Inter pretation of the Poem

8.5 Poetic Devices

8.5.1 Plat

8.5.2 Setting and the me

8.5.3 Form and structure

8.6 Let us sum up

8.7 Questions

8.8 Further Readings

8.0 OBJECTIVES

In this unit, learners will be able to :

- Study the biography of the poet Banjio Paterson.
- Know Banjio Peterson as a poet and his literary works.
- Study the contribution of Banjio Paterson in new literature in English.

8.1 INTRODUCTION

This unit will introduce you to Andrew Barton "Banjo" Paterson, who was an Australian Bush poet, journalist and author, widely considered one of the greatest writers of Australia's colonial period. He was a representative of the Bulletin School of Australian literature. Paterson wrote many of his best known poems for the nationalist journal *The Bulletin*, including "Clancy of the Overflow" (1889) and "The Man from Snowy River" (1890). His 1895 ballad "Waltzing Matilda" is regarded widely as Australia's unofficial national anthem and, according to the National Film and Sound Archive, has been recorded more than any other Australian song.

8.2 BANJO PETERSON : BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCH

Andrew Barton "Banjo" Paterson was an Australian bush poet, journalist and author, widely considered one of the greatest writers of Australia's colonial period. Paterson was born on 17

February 1864 at the property "Narrambla", near Orange, New South Wales, the eldest son of Andrew Bogle Paterson, a Scottish immigrant from Lanarkshire, and Australian-born Rose Isabella Barton, related to the future first prime minister of Australia, Edmund Barton. Paterson's family lived on the isolated Buckinbah Station near Yeoval NSW until he was five when his father lost his wool clip in a flood and was forced to sell up. When Paterson's uncle John Paterson died, his family took over John Paterson's farm in Illa long, near Yass, close to the main route between Melbourne and Sydney. Bullock teams, Cobb and Co coaches and drovers were familiar sights to him. He also saw horsemen from the Murrumbidgee River area and Snowy Mountains country take part in picnic races and polo matches, which led to his fondness of horses and inspired his writings.

Paterson's early education came from a governess, but when he was able to ride a pony, he was taught at the bush school at Binalong. In 1874 Paterson was sent to Sydney Grammar School, performing well both as a student and a sportsman. During this time, he lived in a cottage called Rockend, in the suburb of Gladesville. The cottage is now listed on the Register of the National Estate and New South Wales State Heritage Register. He left the prestigious school at 16 after failing an examination for a scholarship to the University of Sydney.

Paterson was a law clerk with a Sydney-based firm headed by Herbert Salwey, and was admitted as a solicitor in 1886. In the years he practised as a solicitor, he also started writing. From 1885, he began submitting and having poetry published in *The Bulletin*, a literary journal with a nationalist focus. His earliest work was a poem criticising the British war in the Sudan, which also had Australian participation. Over the next decade, the influential journal provided an important platform for Paterson's work, which appeared under the pseudonym of "The Banjo", the name of his favourite horse. As one of its most popular writers through the 1890s, he formed friendships with other significant writers in Australian literature, such as E.J. Brady, Harry "Breaker" Morant, Will H. Ogilvie, and Henry Lawson. In particular, Paterson became engaged in a friendly rivalry of verse with Lawson about the allure of bush life.

Paterson became a war correspondent for *The Sydney Morning Herald* and *The Age* during the Second Boer War, sailing for South Africa in October 1899. There he met fellow war correspondents Winston Churchill and Rudyard Kipling as well as British army leaders Kitcjener, Roberts and Haig. His graphic accounts of the relief of Kimberley, surrender of Bloemfontein (the first correspondent to ride in) and the capture of Pretoria attracted the attention of the press in Britain. An untouched box of chocolates, created by the British company Cadburys for Queen Victoria as a 1900 New Year's gift for troops serving in South Africa, was discovered in Paterson's papers at the National Library of Australia in 2020. He also was a correspondent during the Boxer Rebellion, where he met George Morrison and later wrote about his meeting. He was editor of Samuel Bernett's The Evening News Sydney from 1903 to 1908, and his *Australian Town and Country Journey* 1907 to 1908.

In 1908 after a trip to the United Kingdom he decided to abandon journalism and writing and moved with his family to a 16,000-hectare (40,000-acre) property near Yass In World war I, Paterson failed to become a correspondent covering the fighting in Flanders, but did become an ambulance driver with the Australian Voluntary Hospital, Wimereux,France. He returned to Australia early in 1915 and, as an honorary vet, travelled on three voyages with horses to Africa, China and Egypt. He was commissioned in the 2nd Remount Unit, Australian Imperial Force on 18 October 1915, serving initially in France where he was wounded and reported missing in July 1916 and latterly as commanding officer of the unit based in Cairo, Egypt. He was repatriated to Australia and discharged from the army having risen to the rank of major in April 1919. His wife had joined the Red Cross and worked in an ambulance unit near her husband.

Just as he returned to Australia, the third collection of his poetry, *Saltbush Bill JP*, was published and he continued to publish verse, short stories and essays while continuing to write for the weekly *Truth* Paterson also wrote on rugby league football in the 1920s for the *Sydney Sportsman* In December 1938 Paterson was appointed Commander of the British Empire (CBE).

On 8 April 1903, he married Alice Emily Walker, of Tenterfield Station, in St Stephen's Presbyterian Church, in Tenterfield, New South Wales Their first home was in Queen Street, Woollahra. The Patersons had two children, Grace (born in 1904) and Hugh (born in 1906). Paterson had been previously engaged to Sarah Riley for eight years, but this was abruptly called off in 1895 following a visit to her at Dagworth Station in Queensland where she was visiting the Macpherson family. It was here that Paterson met his fiancée's best friend from school days, Christina Macpherson, who composed the music for which he then wrote the lyrics of the famous Waltzing Matilda. However, following this collaboration Paterson was suddenly asked to leave the property, leading historians to conclude that he was a womanizer and had engaged in a scandalous romantic liaison with Macpherson.

Paterson died of a heart attack in Sydney on 5 February 1941 aged 76. Paterson's grave, along with that of his wife, is in the Northern Suburbs Memorial Gardens and Crematorium, Sydney.

Banjo Paterson's image appears on the $10 note, along with an illustration inspired by "The Man From Snowy River" and, as part of the copy-protection microprint, the text of the poem itself.

Artist Violet Bowring painted a portrait of her one-time neighbour Banjo Paterson, now hanging in Sydney's Australian Club, and used as the cover illustration of a book *The Best of Banjo Paterson*, compiled by Walter Stone, published in 1977. In 1981 he was honoured on a postage stamp issued by Australia Post. A.B. Paterson College, at Arundel on the Gold Coast, Australia, is named after Paterson.

The A. B. "Banjo" Paterson Library at Sydney Grammar School was named after Paterson. The Festival of Arts in Orange, New South Wales, presents a biennial Banjo Paterson Award for poetry and one-act plays and there is also an annual National Book Council Banjo Award. Orange also has an annual Banjo Paterson Poetry Festival. In 1983, a rendition of "Waltzing Matilda" by country-and-western singer Slim Dusty was the first song broadcast by astronauts to Earth. He topped the list of The Greatest of All - Our 50 Top Australians published in *The Australian* on 27 June 2013.

Works

The publication of *The Man from Snowy River* and five other ballads in *The Bulletin* made "The Banjo" a household name. In 1895, Angus & Robertson published these poems as a collection of Australian verse. The book sold 5000 copies in the first four months of publication.

In 1895, Paterson headed north to Dagworth station near Winton, Queensland. Travelling with fiancée, Sarah Riley, they met with her old school friend, Christina Macpherson, who had recently attended a race at Warrnambool in Victoria. She had heard a band playing a tune there, which became stuck in her head and replayed it for Paterson on the autoharp. The melody also resonated with him and propelled him to write ***"Waltzing Matilda"*** While there has been much debate about what inspired the words, the song became one of his most widely known and sung ballads.

In addition, he wrote the lyrics for songs with piano scores, such as *"The Daylight is Dying" and Last Week***.** These were also published by Angus & Robertson between the years 1895 to 1899. In 1905, the same publishers released *Old Bush Songs*, a collection of bush ballads Paterson had been assembling since 1895.

Although for most of his adult life, Paterson lived and worked in Sydney, his poems mostly presented a highly romantic view of the bush and the iconic figure of the bushman. Influenced by the work of another Australian poet, John Farrell, his representation of the bushman as a tough, independent and heroic underdog became the ideal qualities underpinning the national character. His work is often compared to the prose of Henry Lawson, particularly the seminal work, *"The Drover's Wife"*, which presented a considerably less romantic view of the harshness of rural existence of the late 19th century.Paterson authored two novels; *In No Man's Land (later titled An Outback Marriage) (1900) and The Shearer's Colt (1936)*, wrote many short stories; *Three Elephant Power and Other Stories* (1917), and wrote a book based on his experiences as a war reporter, *Happy Dispatches* (1934). He also wrote a book for children, *The Animals Noah Forgot* (1933).Media reports in August 2008 stated that a previously unknown poem had been found in a war diary written during the Boer War.

8.3 BACKGROUND OF THE POEM THE MAN FROM SNOWY RIVER

"The Man from Snowy River" is a poem by Australian bush poet Banjo Paterson. It was first published in *The Bulletin*, an Australian news magazine, on 26 April 1890, and was published by Angus & Robertson in October 1895, with other poems by Paterson, in *The Man from Snowy River and Other Verses***.**

It is recorded in the selected works of "Banjo" Paterson that the location of the ride fictionalised in the poem was in the region of today's Burrinjuck Dam, north-west of Canberra in Australian Capital Territory. Paterson had helped round up brumbies as a child and later owned property in this region.

The Snowy River, from where "the Man" comes, has its headwaters in the Snowy Mountains, the highest section of the Great Dividing Range near the easternmost part of the border between New South Wales and Victoria. The ride does not take place in the Snowy River region because, within the poem, Clancy describes to the other men the country from where *"the man from Snowy River"* comes.

8.3.1 Historical context of the poem

The poem was written at a time in the 1880s and 1890s when Australia was developing a distinct identity as a nation. Though Australia was still a set of self-governing colonies under the final authority of Britain, and had not yet trod the path of nationhood, there was a distinct feeling that Australians needed to be united and become as one. Australians from all walks of life, be they from the country or the city (see "Clancy of the Overflow"), looked to the bush for their mythology and heroic characters. They saw in the Man from Snowy River a hero whose bravery, adaptability and risk-taking could epitomise a new nation in the south. This new nation emerged as the Commonwealth of Australia in 1901.

8.3.2 The Man From Snowy River

(Text)

There was movement at the station, for the word had passed around

That the colt from old Regret had got away,

And had joined the wild bush horses — he was worth a thousand pound,

So all the cracks had gathered to the fray.

All the tried and noted riders from the stations near and far

Had mustered at the homestead overnight,

For the bushmen love hard riding where the wild bush horses are,
And the stockhorse snuffs the battle with delight.

There was Harrison, who made his mark on the war,
And the stockmen tell the story of his ride —
For he followed like a bloodhound on the scent,
And the others came behind, six hundred yards away.

Then they halted for a moment, while they heard him call;
He had turned the wild bush horses, and they were racing for the fall.
He was right among them, wheeling, turning, backing, in pursuit;
He was gaining on them slowly, but they were getting nearer to the gut.
With a rush of blood and a dash of steel,
He wheeled the wild bush horses, and they came rearing back;
But he pulled them round, and held them hard,
And the old black horse, with a rush of pride,
Went on with the wild bush horses, and they never drew the rein.

He sent the floundering mountain steeds, with a shout and a rush,
Through the stringybarks and saplings, where the wild horses used to brush;
He followed like a bloodhound on the scent,
And the others came behind, six hundred yards away.
And he ran them single-handed till their sides were white with foam;
He followed like a bloodhound on the scent;
Till they halted, blown and beaten, with their manes and tails awry;
And he swung his stock whip round, with a shout and a cry.

And he brought them back, those wild bush horses, to the station gate;
And he counted them, and they were all there, not a single one late;
And he swung his stock whip round, with a shout and a cry;
And he brought them back, those wild bush horses, to the station gate.

8.3.3 Summary of the Poem

Banjo Paterson is a Bush Ballad, that tells the story of a young man who single –handedly pursues a prize- winning colt and brings back the mob of wild horses.

The Man from Snowy River,' tells the story of a prizewinning racehorse that escapes from its paddock and lives with the wild horses. Following this, a number of horsemen go on a pursuit to bring back the colt. Unexpectedly, the brumbies descend a seemingly impassable steep slope. Even though other riders give up the pursuit, a young protagonist, the man from the snowy river goes down the ***"terrible descent"*** to recapture the colt on his ***"pony".*** Without minding the danger he catches the mob brings back the horse and becomes a legend among the people of the country.

8.4 ANALYSIS AND INTERPRETATION OF THE POEM

8.4.1 Analysis of the Poem

The first stanza of **'***The Man from Snowy River'* opens with the line *'There was movement at the station, for the word had passed around'* marks the beginning and introduces the story. The *"movement"* attributed to the commotion would have been created at the station when they discovered that a colt worth a thousand pounds had escaped and joined the wild horses in the mountains. As soon as the words are out, a number of riders from near and far have gathered in front of the homestead. They are a group of young men interested in chasing wild horses across wild bushes.

In the second stanza of *'The Man from Snowy River'* Paterson introduces us to some of the stockmen who had assembled for the hunt. Amongst these are Clancy and Harrison, two of the characters from Patterson's poems "*Clancy of the Overflow*" and "*Old Pardon, Son of Reprieve*". They are described as the best horsemen in the area. Their horsemanship is projected in the *descriptions "few could ride beside him when his blood was fairly up"* and *"No better horseman ever held the reins".*

In the third stanza of *'The Man from Snowy River',* Paterson describes the protagonist of the story. He is a scrawny youngster mounted on an equally scrawny little horse. His fellow companions ridicule him and his horse. But, what they do not know, as the narrator says, is a sign of steely courage and tenacity in both the rider and his horse. This man with the *"bright and fiery eye"* is not named by the poet.

Stanza four clearly portrays the people's opinion of the young boy and his horse. The station owner concludes that both the boy and the horse are not suitable for *the "long and tiring gallop".* Thus, he tells the youngster to be away from this risky task. The young boy stays quiet with disappointment. At this point, Clancy comes to stand up for them, stating that the boy and the horse are from some of the toughest parts of the mountain country. He reaffirms to everyone that, he is capable of staying till the end.

In stanza five, Clancy goes on to explain the place where the boy comes from. He is from *"Snowy River, up by Kosciusko's side"* and the hills are twice as steep and rough compared to their place. Also, when a horse climbs up a mountain, its hoofing could create fire for each of its steps. He further tells them that the horsemen often make their home on the mountain. Moreover, he says that he has seen more skillful mountain riders nowhere except there.

Stanzas six and seven make it clear that it was agreed among the riders and they have all set out on the hunt to capture the escaped colt. Finally, they encounter the wild horses by a clump of trees. Unfortunately, when they hear the approaching riders, gallop away to *"the mountain's brow"***.** The old man in the posse gives them the order to go around and catch the horses. For he knew, if they reached the mountain hills, it would be impossible to find them again. As suggested the young men continue their chase and Clancy wheels around the wild horses and races to the front. Once he gained the right spot, he brandished his stock-whip in the air to round them up. Unforeseen by anyone, the horses halt momentarily but dash away into the mountain shrub, their inviting refugee.

In stanza eight, the pursuit is still on and the posse follows the wild horses through the deep gorges and ravines. They ride higher and higher up the steep mountainside amidst the echoes of their stock whips and tread. Despite all the men chasing, the wild horses go farther up and up making it impossible for the riders to chase. After some time, the station owner mutters furiously that it's time to *"bid the mob good day".* He realized, that if the horses reached the top and started their descent down the other side, there was no way of catching them.

In stanza nine, Paterson explains the bravery of the young man from Snowy River. The entire posse, including Clancy, comes to a screeching halt, at the mountain summit. But, the young man continued further with a cheer. He raced his horse down the mountain "like a torrent down its bed." Everyone in the group watches in fear, for they know what awaits is a treacherous path and a small slip could lead to death.

In stanza ten, the narrator illustrates the evidently spectacular ride the man did on the mountain. When everyone watched in awe, he went on and on sending the *"flint stones flying".* Yet, he and his horse went steady on their pursuit, for he neither shifted on his seat nor *"drew the bridle".* He went on the racing speed until they reached the bottom of that "terrible descent".

Stanzas eleven and twelve describe how the man from the snowy river single-handedly captured the mob. As the watchers at the hilltop observed in grave silence, the rider reached the mob and was riding among them. In the next scene, when they saw him after a short break, he was found riding that mob towards a clearing at a distant hillside. Alone he brought them all back like a *"bloodhound on their track".* When he returned, his horse was in blood from *"hip to shoulder from the spur",* but he looked undaunted despite all the pain and exhaustion, reflecting the courage of its rider.

The concluding stanza of the poem describes the fame "*the man from Snowy River"* attained. He proved himself through the heroic act of horsemanship. Thus he has become a name in *"Kosciusko"* and the places around him. Paterson concludes by stating that the young man, who was looked down on by those riders in the beginning has become a legend to the people. Also, the stockmen of the region still speak of his ride.

8.4.2 Interpretation of the poem

Here's an interpretation of the poem *"The Man from Snowy River"* by Banjo Paterson :

- **The Poem as a Celebration of Australian Identity**

  The poem can be seen as a celebration of Australian identity, particularly the values and characteristics associated with the Australian bush. The man from Snowy River embodies these values, including bravery, resourcefulness, and a deep connection to the land.

- **The Man from Snowy River as a Symbol of Masculinity**

  The man from Snowy River can be seen as a symbol of traditional masculinity, with his bravery, strength, and riding skills. However, this interpretation can also be seen as problematic, as it reinforces traditional masculine stereotypes.

- **The Poem as a Reflection of Australian History and Culture**

  The poem reflects the history and culture of Australia, particularly the experiences of rural Australians and the Indigenous people. The poem touches on the theme of colonialism and the impact of European settlement on the Australian landscape.

- **The Man from Snowy River as a Representation of the Australian Psyche**

  The man from Snowy River can be seen as a representation of the Australian psyche, with his love of the land, his independence, and his resilience. This interpretation suggests that the poem is not just a celebration of Australian identity but also a reflection of the Australian national character.

- **The Poem as a Commentary on Class and Social Status**

  The poem can be seen as a commentary on class and social status, with the man from Snowy River representing the working-class rural Australian and the wealthy station owners representing the upper class. This interpretation suggests that the poem is not just a celebration of Australian identity but also a commentary on the social and economic divisions within Australian society.

8.5 POETIC DEVICES

Here are some poetic devices used in the poem *The Man from Snowy River* by Banjo Paterson :

8.5.1 Plot

The story of a brave and skilled horseman from the Snowy River region who captures a valuable colt that has escaped and joined the wild horses.

The Storyline

The poem tells the story of a young horseman from the Snowy River region of Australia. The story begins with the news that a valuable colt has escaped and joined the wild horses (brumbies) in the mountains.

The Man from Snowy River

The man from Snowy River is described as a skilled and fearless rider. He is determined to catch the colt and prove his worth. The poem describes his ride through the rugged terrain, facing steep cliffs, raging rivers, and wild horses.

The Ride

The ride is described in vivid detail, with the man from Snowy River showing exceptional skill and bravery. He follows the colt through the mountains, using his knowledge of the terrain and his horsemanship to stay close.

The Capture

The man from Snowy River finally captures the colt, and the poem describes the excitement and admiration of the onlookers.

8.5.2 Setting and Theme

- **Setting :** *The Man from Snowy River,* though revolves around the legend of *"The Man"* who comes down from the region of Snowy River, and deals with the themes of perseverance, bravery, horsemanship, etc. The story is set in the fictional region of a mountain range inspired by the place Burrinjuck Dam, situated northwest of Canberra in the Australian Capital Territory. It is clear from the poem that the story is not taking place in the Snowy River region, for Clancy, one of the characters in the poem gives a description of the country from where *The Man from Snowy River* comes.

- **Themes : Bravery and Courage** : The man from Snowy River shows exceptional bravery and courage in the face of danger.

Skill and Expertise : The poem highlights the man's exceptional horsemanship and knowledge of the terrain.

Australian Identity : The poem celebrates the Australian identity, particularly the values and characteristics associated with the Australian bush.

Challenge and Achievement : The poem tells the story of a challenging task and the man's ultimate achievement, emphasizing the importance of perseverance and determination.

8.5.3 Form and Structure

The Man from Snowy River is one of the best examples of *"bush ballad",* a style of poetry that depicts the life, character, and scenery of the Australian bush. In the poem, the poet describes the story of the man who captures a colt from the mountain, in thirteen stanzas. The poem follows a regular structure and rhyme scheme. ABABCDCD. to create a sense of musicality and structure. The poem is written in a loose iambic tetrameter, with four beats per line, which creates a sense of rhythm and flow.

- **Ballad**

  "The Man from Snowy River" is indeed a ballad, a narrative poem that tells a story in verse, typically with a folkloric or legendary theme. As a ballad, *"The Man from Snowy River"* exhibits many characteristic features, including :

- **Narrative structure** : The poem tells a story with a clear beginning, middle, and end.
- **Verse and rhyme** : The poem is written in quatrains (four-line stanzas) with a consistent rhyme scheme.
- **Folkloric theme :** The poem celebrates the skills and bravery of a rural Australian horseman.
- **Simple, direct language :** The poem uses straightforward, uncomplicated language to convey the story.

  By using the ballad form, Banjo Paterson was able to create a sense of tradition and authenticity, drawing on the folkloric heritage of Australia to tell a story that has become an iconic part of the country's cultural identity.

- **Imagery**

  Visual imagery : Paterson uses vivid descriptions of the Australian landscape to create powerful images in the reader's mind. *The man from Snowy River* (establishes the setting) creates vivid images of the Australian landscape, such as *"the mountains steep"* (creates an image of rugged terrain) *"the rivers wide"*(evokes a sense of expansive waterways)**,** and *"the valleys green"*(contrasts with the harsh mountain environment)

  Kinesthetic imagery : The poem describes the physical sensations of horse riding, like *"the rush of the mountain stream"* creates a sense of movement and energy) *and "the crash of the branches".*(evokes the sound and feeling of riding through dense foliage)

  Auditory imagery : Paterson uses sound effects to create a dynamic atmosphere :like *"the shout of the drovers"* (adds to the sense of excitement and energy) *and "the thunder of hooves"* (creates a sense of power and movement)

- **Figurative Language**

  Metaphor : The comparison of the man from Snowy River to a *"mountain devil"* creates a powerful metaphor, emphasizing his strength and agility.

  Simile : Paterson uses similes like *"he rode like a madman"*(emphasizes his recklessness and bravery) and *"he flowed like a torrent"* (creates an image of smooth, effortless movement) to describe the man's riding skills.

  Personification : The poem personifies the mountains, rivers, and valleys, giving them human-like qualities, such as *"the mountains steep"* gives the mountains a sense of ruggedness and challenge) *and "the valleys green". The mountains steep"* (gives the mountains a sense of ruggedness and challenge) *"The valleys green"* (contrasts with the harsh mountain environment and creates a sense of tranquility)

  Alliteration : Paterson uses alliteration in phrases like *"the rush of the river" and "the shout of the drovers"*.

  Assonance : The poem features assonance in words like "*wide" and "ride",* creating a musical quality.

  Enjambment : Paterson uses enjambment throughout the poem, where a sentence or phrase continues into the next line without punctuation, creating a sense of flow and momentum.

  Repetition : The poem repeats certain phrases and ideas, such as the description of the man's riding skills, to emphasize their importance and create a sense of rhythm.

- **Symbolism**

  The Man from Snowy River : The protagonist symbolizes the quintessential Australian bushman : tough, resourceful, and independent.

  The Wild Horses : The brumbies represent the untamed power of nature, while the colt represents the challenge and reward of conquering that power.

  The Mountains and Rivers : The Australian landscape symbolizes the country's rugged beauty and the challenges faced by its people.

8.6 LET US SUM UP

Banjo Paterson (1864-1941) was a renowned Australian poet, journalist, and novelist who made significant contributions to New English Literature. Paterson's poetry and stories helped to establish the Australian bush tradition, which celebrated the country's rural landscape, people, and culture. His works, such as *"The Man from Snowy River"* and ***"Waltzing Matilda",*** created iconic Australian characters that have become an integral part of the country's folklore. Paterson's writing showcased the Australian identity, highlighting the country's unique culture, history, and environment. His work influenced a generation of Australian writers, including Henry Lawson, Steele Rudd, and Dorothea Mackellar.

Paterson's writing was characterized by a romantic and nationalist tone, celebrating the beauty of the Australian landscape and the country's people. He was a masterful storyteller, using balladry and narrative poetry to tell stories of Australian life, history, and culture. His works explored themes such as the Australian bush, the outback, the struggles of rural life, and the country's history and folklore.

8.7 QUESTIONS

Q.1 Give brief life sketch of Banjo Paterson.

Q.2 Discuss the contribution of literary works of Banjo Paterson.

Q.3 Discuss the poetic device of the poem, *The Man from Snowy River.*

Q.4 Discuss the historical background of the poem *The man from Snowy river.*

Q.5 Write summary of the poem *The man from Snowy river.*

8.8 FURTHER READINGS

- *Semmler, Clement.Paterson , Andrew Barton Banjo (1864-1941) Australian Dictionary of Biography. Australian National University. Retrieved 3 April 2014.*
- The Man from Snowy River, 1895 *State Library of NSW. Retrieved 3 April 2014.*
- *"Charlie McKeashine" Boake. Archived from the original on 29 May 2010. Retrieved 7 January 2013.*
- Charlie McKeahnie history pages- Hsnowyman Archived 2006-07-21 at the Wayback Machine
- Tim Holt, "The Man from Snowy River revealed" ABC Southeast New South Wales, 23 March 2004
- "Stockman of whom Poet Sang"- Brisbane Courier-Mail 21/12/1938
- "Walgett" *Australian Town and Country Journal Vol. XVI, no. 401. New South Wales, Australia. 8 September 1877. p. 21. Retrieved 9 November 2018 – via National Library of Australia.*
- *Smith, Roff (April 2008).Australia's Bard" National Geographic. Archived from the original on 28 December 2007. Retrieved 2 September 2012.*
- *"The Bush Poems of AB (Banjio Paterson at Fine poets."*

BLOCK-III

INTRODUCTION

This is the third block of the *New Literatures in English* course. It explores Canadian Literature, a field marked by cultural pluralism, bilingual heritage, indigenous presence, and the country's vast natural landscapes. This block is divided into four units. **Unit nine** traces the development of Canadian writing as it moves from colonial imitation to multicultural confidence. **Unit Ten** Susanna Moodie's "Indian Summer," rooted in early settler experience, reflects the struggles and emotional responses of immigrants negotiating an unfamiliar land. Margaret Atwood in *The Blind Assassin* examines gender dynamics, power structures, and the blurred boundaries between fiction and reality, reinforcing her status as a major global literary figure in **Unit Eleven**. **Unit Twelve** discusses Toni Morrison's *Beloved*, the thematic resonance with broader issues of racial trauma, memory, and the long shadows of slavery—issues important not only in Canada's historical context but also in the postcolonial world at large. In Short, this block highlights how Canadian literature engages with survival, identity, marginality, and the rewriting of national narratives.

UNIT-9 INTRODUCTION TO CANADIAN LITERATURE

Structure

9.0 Objective

9.1 Introduction

9.2 The History of Canadian Literature

9.3 Major Concerns in Canadian Literature

9.4 Prominent Authors of Canadian Literature

9.5 Landmark Writings in Canadian Literature

9.6 Let Us Sum Up

9.7 Questions

9.8 Further Readings

9.0 OBJECTIVE

The objective of studying *Introduction to Canadian Literature* in postgraduate courses is to provide students with a critical understanding of the historical evolution, thematic diversity, and cultural specificity of Canadian literary traditions. This course aims to explore major authors, texts, and movements that have shaped Canadian literature, while examining the intersections of identity, nationhood, multiculturalism, Indigenous voices, diaspora, and postcolonial concerns. It encourages students to engage with various literary forms—fiction, poetry, drama, and nonfiction—and to develop analytical skills through theoretical frameworks and comparative perspectives. The course ultimately fosters a nuanced appreciation of Canada's literary landscape within a global and postcolonial context.

9.1 INTRODUCTION

Canadian literature, a rich and evolving body of work, reflects the diverse landscapes, peoples, and histories of Canada. Rooted in the oral traditions of Indigenous peoples long before European colonization, Canadian literature began to take shape in written form during the early colonial period. As a multicultural and bilingual nation, Canada has produced literature in English, French, and various Indigenous languages, each offering distinct perspectives on identity, place, and belonging. The Canadian literary tradition has been profoundly shaped by its geography—vast wildernesses, harsh winters, and remote settlements—which often appear as powerful motifs in fiction and poetry. Writers such as Margaret Atwood, Alice Munro, Michael Ondaatje, and Leonard Cohen have gained international recognition for their nuanced exploration of themes like gender, migration, memory, and environmental consciousness. Quebecois literature, with figures like Gabrielle Roy and Michel Tremblay, adds further depth to the national narrative. Additionally, immigrant and diasporic voices, including those of Rohinton Mistry, Dionne Brand, and Joy Kogawa, have significantly broadened the Canadian literary imagination. Canadian literature continues to evolve, engaging with issues of colonialism, reconciliation with Indigenous communities, and the complexities of modern multiculturalism, positioning itself as a vibrant, reflective, and inclusive domain in world literature.

9.2 THE HISTORY OF CANADIAN LITERATURE

The history of Canadian literature is a layered and evolving narrative, shaped by the country's unique geography, colonial history, multilingual heritage, and socio-political transformations. Stretching from the rich oral storytelling traditions of Indigenous peoples to the globally recognized voices of contemporary Canadian authors, this literary history reveals a complex combination of cultural identities, linguistic expressions, and national consciousness. Before European colonization, Indigenous peoples of what is now Canada had rich oral traditions, including myths, legends, songs, and histories transmitted across generations. These oral narratives, often rooted in the land and spiritual cosmology, were not merely stories but integral to Indigenous knowledge systems and social structures. Nations such as the Haudenosaunee, Anishinaabe, Inuit, and Cree told stories that explained natural phenomena, social customs, and ancestral lineages. These traditions continue to exert influence in the present-day revival and affirmation of Indigenous voices in Canadian literature, especially through writers like Thomas King, Lee Maracle, Eden Robinson, and Richard Wagamese.

The arrival of European settlers, particularly the French and British, in the 16th and 17th centuries introduced written forms of literature to the region. Early colonial literature often took the form of journals, travel narratives, and missionary accounts. French explorers such as Samuel de Champlain documented their experiences in New France, describing the unfamiliar terrain and Indigenous cultures. These early texts, while limited in literary style, offer historical insights into the colonial imagination and the emerging Canadian landscape. The 18th and 19th centuries witnessed the gradual formation of a colonial literary identity. In the English-speaking colonies, literature often mimicked British forms and themes, reflecting the colonial elite's desire to maintain cultural ties with Britain. During this period, authors such as Oliver Goldsmith (not to be confused with the Irish poet) and Thomas Chandler Haliburton emerged. Haliburton's satirical *The Clockmaker* (1836) is often cited as one of the earliest examples of Canadian fiction, featuring the character Sam Slick—a Yankee clock peddler whose witty observations reflected on the social and political conditions of the colonies. In French Canada, writers like Philippe Aubert de Gaspé began to cultivate a literary identity that sought to preserve French-Canadian culture amidst increasing Anglophone dominance. His historical romance *Les Anciens Canadiens* (1863) portrayed the struggles and values of the French-Canadian people in the context of colonial conflict and conquest, offering an early expression of cultural resistance.

The Confederation of Canada in 1867 marked a significant shift in the nation's literary development. The desire to assert a distinct national identity fostered a growing interest in uniquely Canadian themes, landscapes, and voices. The Confederation Poets—including Charles G.D. Roberts, Bliss Carman, Archibald Lampman, and Duncan Campbell Scott—played a vital role in shaping a Canadian poetic tradition. Heavily influenced by Romanticism and the British poetic canon, they celebrated the Canadian wilderness, seasons, and national spirit. However, some, like Scott, also held problematic roles in Canadian history; Scott, as a civil servant, was a proponent of the residential school system, which has left a painful legacy in Indigenous communities. As the 20th century dawned, Canadian literature began to mature and diversify. The First World War and the Great Depression in 1930s catalysed a shift toward realism and social critique. Authors like Frederick Philip Grove, Morley Callaghan, and Martha Ostenso explored themes of isolation, moral ambiguity, and the struggles of rural and urban life. Grove's *Settlers of the Marsh* (1925), for example, delved into the harsh realities of prairie life, portraying the physical and emotional challenges faced by immigrants and farmers.

By the mid-20th century, Canadian literature began to gain greater national and international prominence. The post-war period saw the rise of significant voices who reshaped the literary landscape. Hugh MacLennan's *Two Solitudes* (1945) explored the cultural divide between English and French Canada, a recurring theme in the nation's literature. Robertson Davies, with his *Deptford Trilogy (1970-1975)*, blended psychological insight with mythological allusions, while Mordecai Richler's satirical novels like *The Apprenticeship of Duddy Kravitz* (1959) examined Jewish identity and class mobility in Montreal. The 1960s and 1970s were transformative decades. Canada underwent profound political and cultural shifts, including the Quiet Revolution in Quebec in 1960s, Indigenous activism, and a growing feminist movement. During this time, Canadian literature experienced a renaissance, driven in part by state support through grants, the establishment of Canadian publishing houses, and academic interest in Canadian studies. Margaret Atwood emerged as a leading literary figure, with works like *The Edible Woman* (1969) and *Surfacing* (1972), which critically examined gender roles, environmental concerns, and national identity. Atwood's *Survival : A Thematic Guide to Canadian Literature* (1972) became a seminal critical text, arguing that "survival" is a defining motif in Canadian writing.

Alongside Atwood, Alice Munro's masterful short stories captured the subtleties of domestic life and small-town Ontario. Her focus on psychological depth, especially in the lives of women, earned her global acclaim and culminated in the Nobel Prize for Literature in 2013. Michael Ondaatje's *The English Patient* (1992), which won the Booker Prize, offered a lyrical meditation on love, war, and identity, illustrating the postmodern turn in Canadian fiction. Ondaatje's Sri Lankan heritage also signalled the growing influence of immigrant and diasporic narratives. The rise of multiculturalism as official Canadian policy in the 1970s led to the flourishing of literature by authors from diverse cultural backgrounds. Writers such as Joy Kogawa (*Obasan, 1981)*, Rohinton Mistry (*Such a Long Journey, 1991*), and Dionne Brand (*What We All Long For, 2005*) introduced stories of migration, racism, exile, and the search for belonging. Their works interrogated Canada's myth of inclusivity and highlighted the ongoing challenges faced by racialized communities. Simultaneously, Quebecois literature developed its own vibrant identity. Writers like Michel Tremblay used the *joual* dialect to depict working-class Montreal life, while Gabrielle Roy's *The Tin Flute* (1945) portrayed poverty and resilience in wartime Quebec. The Quebec sovereignty movement inspired a rich literary discourse around language, identity, and nationalism. Indigenous literature has emerged as one of the most vital and transformative currents in Canadian letters. After decades of marginalization, Indigenous writers have reclaimed their narrative agency. Maria Campbell's *Halfbreed* (1973) and Beatrice Culleton Mosionier's *In Search of April Raintree* (1983) were foundational memoirs of Métis experience and survival. More recent authors like Leanne Betasamosake Simpson, Billy-Ray Belcourt, and Jesse Thistle have continued this legacy, blending traditional knowledge with contemporary forms and asserting literature as a site of resistance, healing, and resurgence.

In the 21st century, Canadian literature continues to expand in form, voice, and scope. Authors experiment with genre and media, incorporate digital storytelling, and address global issues such as climate change, migration, and decolonization. The Giller Prize, Governor General's Awards, and Scotiabank Giller Prize have brought greater attention to Canadian writers, fostering an environment that supports literary innovation. Canadian literature today is also characterized by its polyphony—a plurality of languages, histories, and perspectives. It grapples with the tensions between centre and margin, memory and forgetting, past injustices and future aspirations. Whether through the poetry of Anne Carson, the speculative fiction of Nalo Hopkinson, or the poignant memoirs of Indigenous survivors, Canadian literature reflects a nation constantly interrogating its own identity and conscience.

9.3 MAJOR CONCERNS IN CANADIAN LITERATURE

Canadian literature, in its complexity and richness, is shaped by a variety of major concerns that emerge from the nation's unique historical, cultural, geographical, and political contexts. Unlike many literary traditions that evolve under relatively unified national narratives, Canadian literature is marked by its multiplicity—of voices, languages, and regional experiences. This pluralism results in a vibrant literary field that constantly interrogates questions of identity, place, belonging, and historical memory. Among the most pressing and recurring concerns in Canadian literature are the issues of national identity, the negotiation of multiculturalism and diaspora, the legacy of colonialism and Indigenous resistance, the dominance of nature and landscape, gender and feminist concerns, linguistic duality, and the tensions between marginality and centre. Each of these themes reflects the fragmented yet interconnected realities of Canadian life.

One of the foundational concerns in Canadian literature is the search for and interrogation of **national identity**. As a relatively young nation forged through colonial conquest and continuous immigration, Canada has struggled to articulate a cohesive cultural identity. Unlike the mythic national traditions found in British or American literature, Canadian writing frequently reflects uncertainty, ambivalence, and fragmentation. In her influential critical work *Survival : A Thematic Guide to Canadian Literature* (1972), Margaret Atwood argued that the central motif in Canadian writing is not heroism or conquest, but survival. She emphasized the psychological, physical, and existential strategies characters must adopt to cope with hostile landscapes, historical injustices, and cultural displacement. Canadian literature thus often presents identity not as an established given, but as a condition to be negotiated in the face of loss, isolation, and historical erasure.

Closely tied to the question of identity is the **issue of multiculturalism and diaspora**. Canada's official policy of multiculturalism, introduced in 1971, encouraged the preservation of cultural identities within a pluralist framework. This policy opened the literary space to immigrant and diasporic voices that had long been excluded from the canon. Writers such as Rohinton Mistry (*Such a Long Journey, 1991*), Michael Ondaatje (*In the Skin of a Lion, 1987*), Joy Kogawa (*Obasan, 1981*), and Dionne Brand (*What We All Long For, 2005*) have explored the intricacies of immigrant experiences, cultural memory, racial exclusion, and the tensions between assimilation and cultural preservation. These narratives confront the idealized vision of Canada as a land of inclusivity and instead reveal the structural racism, displacement, and emotional complexities that shape diasporic identities.

The **Indigenous question**—the legacy of colonialism, cultural genocide, and Indigenous resurgence—represents one of the most ethically urgent and intellectually vital concerns in Canadian literature. For centuries, Indigenous voices were marginalized or appropriated in mainstream Canadian writing. In recent decades, however, Indigenous authors such as Thomas King (*The Truth About Stories, 2003*), Lee Maracle (*Celia's Song, 2014*), Richard Wagamese (*Indian Horse, 2012*), Eden Robinson (*Monkey Beach, 2000*), and Leanne Betasamosake Simpson (*Islands of Decolonial Love, 2013*) have reclaimed narrative agency. Their works challenge settler colonial myths, critique the residential school system, reassert Indigenous epistemologies, and explore contemporary struggles of cultural survival. These texts emphasize storytelling not merely as an artistic act but as a mode of resistance, healing, and political intervention. A recurring theme is the restoration of Indigenous worldviews and the re-sacralization of land, relationships, and community.

Another pervasive concern in Canadian literature is the **relationship with nature and landscape**. Canada's vast and often harsh environment has profoundly shaped its literary imagination. The wilderness, the North, the forest, the prairie—these are not mere settings but symbolic terrains that reflect psychological, existential, and cultural dilemmas. The early Confederation poets like Archibald Lampman and Charles G.D. Roberts depicted nature in Romantic

and pastoral terms, while later writers such as Margaret Laurence (*The Stone Angel, 1964*) and Alice Munro (*Lives of Girls and Women,1971*) examined how rural life interacts with human consciousness and social change. In contemporary writing, ecological concerns and climate anxieties feature prominently, linking Canadian literature to global environmental debates. Writers like Alistair MacLeod, Don McKay, and Kathleen Winter grapple with how the natural world embodies both beauty and brutality, continuity and threat.

Gender and feminist concerns have also played a significant role in shaping Canadian literature. The feminist movement of the 1960s and 1970s opened new avenues for women writers to explore themes of domesticity, power, sexuality, and the body. Margaret Atwood's *The Handmaid's Tale* (1985) stands as a seminal feminist dystopia that critiques patriarchal structures and the commodification of women's bodies. Writers such as Alice Munro, Carol Shields, Margaret Laurence, and Lynn Coady have brought attention to the interior lives of women, challenging traditional narratives of womanhood and illuminating the constraints and potentialities of female agency. These explorations are often subtle and embedded in the minutiae of everyday life, making Canadian feminist literature distinctive in its psychological realism and moral depth.

Linguistic duality and regionalism constitute further major concerns. Canada's bilingual structure—English and French—has resulted in two parallel literary traditions that often remain in tension or mutual neglect. Quebecois literature, represented by figures like Gabrielle Roy, Michel Tremblay, and Dany Laferrière, addresses questions of language, identity, class, and the struggle for cultural autonomy. Meanwhile, the Anglophone tradition has grappled with its colonial inheritance and transnational affiliations. Beyond this duality, regionalism plays a key role in defining literary sensibilities. Atlantic Canada, the Prairies, the North, and British Columbia all offer distinct cultural and historical contexts, and authors from these regions often foreground localized experiences that resist national homogenization.

Finally, Canadian literature frequently addresses the **tension between the margin and the centre**. Whether in terms of geography (urban vs. rural, East vs. West), language (minority vs. majority), or culture (Indigenous vs. settler), Canadian literature thrives on its interrogation of peripheries. It often voices those who exist on the edges—economically marginalized, culturally alienated, historically silenced. This emphasis on marginality fosters a literature of empathy and critique, where the dominant narratives of nationhood are constantly questioned and reimagined.

9.4 PROMINENT AUTHORS OF CANADIAN LITERATURE

The prominence of the following authors lies not only in their literary achievements but in their capacity to articulate the layered and contested realities of Canadian life. Through their diverse voices and genres, they have expanded the boundaries of what constitutes Canadian literature. Whether through feminist introspection, Indigenous resurgence, diasporic memory, or experimental poetics, these authors ensure that Canadian literature remains a critical, inclusive, and globally relevant field of artistic and intellectual expression.

Margaret Atwood stands as one of the most iconic figures in Canadian literature. Her work spans fiction, poetry, criticism, and speculative fiction, and her themes often explore gender politics, environmental degradation, dystopia, and Canadian identity. Atwood's *The Handmaid's Tale* (1985), a chilling vision of a theocratic dystopia that suppresses women's rights, has become a touchstone for feminist literature and a prophetic political warning. Her earlier novels such as *The Edible Woman* (1969) and *Surfacing* (1972) explore female subjectivity and the psychological effects of patriarchal control, often through protagonists negotiating identity crises in an alienating world. Atwood's critical work, *Survival : A Thematic Guide to Canadian Literature* (1972), remains an

influential text, proposing "survival" as the central motif in Canadian writing. Her international acclaim, including two Booker Prizes, has cemented her status as Canada's literary ambassador.

Another towering figure is **Alice Munro**, widely regarded as one of the finest short story writers in the English language. Known for her psychological depth, meticulous prose, and ability to capture the intricacies of ordinary lives—especially those of women in rural Ontario—Munro has transformed the short story form into a space of profound emotional and philosophical exploration. Her collections such as *Dance of the Happy Shades* (1968), *The Beggar Maid* (1978), and *Runaway* (2004) are masterclasses in narrative subtlety and moral ambiguity. In 2013, she was awarded the Nobel Prize in Literature, with the Swedish Academy praising her as a "master of the contemporary short story." Munro's works frequently explore themes of memory, time, relationships, and the limitations of social roles.

Michael Ondaatje, a Sri Lankan-born Canadian writer, has brought a poetic sensibility to Canadian prose through his lyrical and hybrid narratives. His best-known work, *The English Patient* (1992), which won the Booker Prize and was adapted into an Oscar-winning film, intricately weaves together the lives of four characters in an Italian villa during World War II. Ondaatje's themes include exile, war, love, memory, and the reconstruction of identity across cultures. His earlier novel *In the Skin of a Lion* (1987) narrates the lives of immigrant workers in Toronto and explores the politics of invisibility and historical silencing. Ondaatje's prose blends history and imagination, making his narratives both aesthetically evocative and politically resonant.

Among the early and influential women writers, **Margaret Laurence** holds a significant place. Her *Manawaka* series—particularly *The Stone Angel* (1964) and *A Jest of God* (1966)—depicts strong, complex female protagonists grappling with societal expectations, family legacies, and existential dilemmas. Laurence's writing, grounded in prairie realism, explores feminist themes and questions of moral authority, memory, and reconciliation. Her protagonists are often older women reflecting on their life choices, relationships, and regrets, thereby contributing to a feminist counter-narrative that challenged dominant patriarchal literary paradigms of her time.

Mordecai Richler, a Jewish-Canadian novelist from Montreal, is best known for his satirical and socially critical fiction that explores themes of identity, assimilation, and morality in Canadian society. His novel *The Apprenticeship of Duddy Kravitz* (1959) portrays a young Jewish man's ambition and ethical compromises in post-war Montreal, shedding light on the pressures of economic success and cultural identity in a diasporic context. Richler's wit and his critical stance toward Canadian nationalism, especially Quebec separatism, sparked both admiration and controversy, making him one of Canada's most debated literary figures.

In Francophone Canadian literature, **Gabrielle Roy** remains a central voice. Her landmark novel *The Tin Flute* (*Bonheur d'occasion*, 1945) is a poignant portrayal of working-class life in wartime Montreal, capturing the socio-economic struggles of French Canadians with empathy and nuance. Roy's lyrical style and social realism brought global recognition to Quebec literature and laid the groundwork for later Quebecois writers like Michel Tremblay, whose plays and novels explore working-class identity, sexual orientation, and the politics of language in Quebec.

In recent decades, **Indigenous authors** have fundamentally reshaped Canadian literature by reclaiming narratives and challenging colonial representations. **Thomas King**, with works like *Green Grass, Running Water* (1993), combines humour, Indigenous storytelling techniques, and postmodern narrative play to critique stereotypes and explore cultural hybridity. **Lee Maracle**, a Sto :lo writer (the Sto :lō Nation is a group of First Nations peoples whose ancestral territory, called S'olh Temexw, lies in the Fraser Valley region of British Columbia, Canada), feminist, and activist, has used fiction, memoir, and theory to articulate Indigenous women's experiences and

epistemologies. Her novel *Celia's Song* (2014) explores intergenerational trauma and the power of storytelling in healing. **Richard Wagamese's** *Indian Horse* (2012), set against the backdrop of Canada's residential school system, tells the story of a young Ojibwe boy whose passion for hockey becomes a means of survival and resilience. These authors are not only literary innovators but also crucial voices in the national dialogue on truth, reconciliation, and decolonization.

Diasporic and immigrant authors have also significantly enriched Canadian literature. **Rohinton Mistry**, originally from Mumbai, captures the complexities of Indian life and migration in novels such as *Such a Long Journey* (1991) and *A Fine Balance* (1995). Though often set in India, his work explores displacement, nostalgia, and moral struggle—universal themes that resonate with immigrant communities in Canada. **Dionne Brand**, a poet, essayist, and novelist, brings Black feminist and Caribbean perspectives into Canadian literature. Her novel *What We All Long For* (2005) explores the lives of immigrant youth in Toronto, intersecting themes of race, urban alienation, and intergenerational trauma.

Contemporary Canadian literature continues to evolve with dynamic voices like **Eden Robinson**, whose Haisla heritage informs her fiction. Her novel *Monkey Beach* (2000) blends Indigenous spirituality, familial loss, and coming-of-age themes within a coastal British Columbia setting. **Billy-Ray Belcourt**, a Cree poet and scholar, brings a deeply lyrical and philosophical voice to issues of queerness, decolonial love, and Indigenous futurism. His poetry and prose interrogate the intersections of race, desire, and historical memory.

9.5 LANDMARK WRITINGS IN CANADIAN LITERATURE

The landmark writings in Canadian literature are defined not only by their literary innovation but by their enduring thematic resonance. They chronicle and critique the evolving story of Canada—its colonial legacies, multicultural experiment, Indigenous resurgence, gender dynamics, and ecological consciousness. The follwing texts provide profound insight into the human condition while reflecting the particularities of Canadian experience, rendering the nation's literature an essential part of global literary discourse. Through these writings, Canadian literature has continually challenged singular narratives and embraced its fragmented, pluralistic, and contested identity, making it one of the most reflective and ethically engaged literary traditions in the world.

One of the earliest landmark writings is Gabrielle Roy's *The Tin Flute* (*Bonheur d'occasion*, 1945), a foundational text in Quebecois literature that thematises poverty, gender, and class in wartime Montreal. The novel captures the daily struggles of working-class Francophone families in the Saint-Henri district and reveals how economic hardships shape interpersonal relationships and aspirations. Through the protagonist Florentine, Roy presents the limited opportunities available to women and the harsh cost of survival. Thematically, this novel brings to light issues of maternal sacrifice, the illusion of romantic escape, and systemic oppression—all set against the backdrop of a changing urban and national identity during World War II. While Margaret Laurence's *The Stone Angel* (1964) is another major thematic landmark in English Canadian literature. Set in the fictional prairie town of Manawaka, the novel centres on Hagar Shipley, a ninety-year-old woman looking back at her life with defiance and regret. Thematically, it explores old age, pride, generational conflict, and the roles imposed upon women in small-town Canada. Through Hagar's voice, Laurence critiques patriarchal expectations while simultaneously capturing the interior landscape of a woman struggling for agency and meaning. The prairie environment becomes both a literal and symbolic site of endurance, solitude, and self-confrontation, linking personal and national narratives of survival.

The question of identity, particularly in the context of multiculturalism and immigration, finds powerful expression in Rohinton Mistry's *Such a Long Journey* (1991). Though set in

Bombay, the novel's inclusion in Canadian literature is justified not only by Mistry's immigrant background but also by the way it exemplifies diasporic thematics—exile, memory, cultural dissonance, and the legacy of colonialism. The narrative follows Gustad Noble, a middle-aged Parsi bank clerk, whose life unravels amid personal and political turmoil. Themes of betrayal, loyalty, and marginality dominate the novel, and Mistry presents a densely textured portrayal of how public histories deeply affect private lives. His other novel, *A Fine Balance* (1995), further broadens the canvas, illustrating human dignity amid systemic oppression. And, Michael Ondaatje's *The English Patient* (1992), awarded the Booker Prize, is thematically notable for its lyrical exploration of love, war, memory, and the fragmented self. Set in a bombed Italian villa during the final months of World War II, the novel weaves together the lives of four characters, each wounded by history and desire. The titular character, burned and nameless, serves as a metaphor for dislocation and the fluidity of identity. The novel's non-linear structure and poetic prose deepen its thematic concerns, offering a meditation on the interweaving of personal trauma and historical catastrophe. Ondaatje's focus on borders—geographical, emotional, and cultural—aligns with Canada's own shifting sense of national and transnational identity.

The feminist and dystopian thematics of Margaret Atwood's *The Handmaid's Tale* (1985) render it a global literary landmark. Set in the totalitarian regime of Gilead, the novel imagines a future where women are stripped of rights and reduced to reproductive functionaries. Thematically, it interrogates patriarchy, religious extremism, reproductive autonomy, and resistance. While Gilead is fictional, Atwood's meticulous construction of the regime draws on real historical precedents, reinforcing the idea that dystopias are not futuristic inventions but exaggerations of existing injustices. The novel also examines language as a site of power and erasure—central concerns in Canadian literature, especially regarding colonial narratives and Indigenous silencing. While, in the realm of Indigenous literature, Thomas King's *Green Grass, Running Water* (1993) stands as a revolutionary thematic intervention. The novel mixes Western and Indigenous storytelling traditions, myth and history, satire and realism, to critique colonial constructs and affirm Indigenous worldviews. Through a cast of characters entangled in both personal and cultural identities, King addresses themes of creation, resistance, humour, and narrative sovereignty. The novel challenges linear history and dominant mythologies, instead privileging cyclical time, oral tradition, and the transformative power of storytelling. Similarly, Richard Wagamese's *Indian Horse* (2012) addresses the traumatic legacy of residential schools and their intergenerational impact. The protagonist, Saul Indian Horse, finds solace and temporary liberation in hockey, but the novel's central themes revolve around cultural dispossession, spiritual survival, and the long road to healing. Wagamese humanizes the consequences of colonialism without reducing Indigenous experience to victimhood, making the novel both a personal and collective testimony.

In Francophone literature, Michel Tremblay's *Chroniques du Plateau Mont-Royal* (1978) series brings attention to working-class life in Montreal through characters who speak *joual*, the local dialect. His thematic concerns include sexual identity, linguistic resistance, maternal relationships, and cultural authenticity. Tremblay's work revolutionised Quebecois literature by decentralising literary French and legitimising popular speech as a medium of artistic expression. Moreover, recent thematic interventions in Canadian literature include Dionne Brand's *What We All Long For* (2005), which centres on second-generation immigrants navigating urban alienation, racial identity, and intergenerational trauma in Toronto. Brand's narrative thematises longing—not just for place or belonging, but for justice, emotional truth, and collective healing. Her poetic language and engagement with transnational Black consciousness reflect the broader thematic expansion of Canadian literature into global and diasporic domains.

9.6 LET US SUM UP

Canadian literature is a rich, diverse, and evolving body of work shaped by the nation's unique cultural, historical, and geographical contexts. Its development spans from Indigenous oral traditions to globally acclaimed contemporary writings. Central themes include survival, identity, colonialism, multiculturalism, gender, environmental consciousness, and Indigenous resurgence. Landmark works by authors like Margaret Atwood, Alice Munro, Michael Ondaatje, Rohinton Mistry, Thomas King, and Gabrielle Roy critically explore personal and collective struggles through innovative narrative forms. The literature reflects Canada's pluralistic identity, encompassing voices in English, French, and Indigenous languages. From rural isolation and immigrant alienation to feminist resistance and decolonial narratives, Canadian authors articulate a deeply reflective and ethically conscious literary tradition. Their landmark writings interrogate national myths, reveal marginalised experiences, and contribute significantly to global literary discourse. Overall, Canadian literature exemplifies a commitment to diversity, introspection, and social justice through its thematically rich and stylistically varied expressions.

9.7 QUESTIONS

1. How do themes of survival and identity shape the evolution of Canadian literature from colonial to contemporary times? Illustrate with examples from key texts.
2. In what ways do Indigenous authors challenge colonial narratives and redefine Canadian literary traditions through their storytelling techniques and themes?
3. Discuss how Canadian multiculturalism and immigration policies are reflected in the works of diasporic writers like Rohinton Mistry, Dionne Brand, or Joy Kogawa.
4. Examine the role of gender and feminist consciousness in shaping the literary contributions of authors such as Margaret Atwood, Margaret Laurence, and Alice Munro.
5. How do landmark works like *The Handmaid's Tale, The English Patient*, or *Indian Horse* represent Canada's socio-political concerns and contribute to global literary discourse?

9.8 FURTHER READINGS

- Margaret Atwood – *Survival : A Thematic Guide to Canadian Literature* (1972)
- W.H. New – *A History of Canadian Literature* (2nd Edition, 2003)
- Donna Palmateer Pennee – *National Identity and the Politics of Canadian Literature* (1998)
- Terry Goldie – *Fear and Temptation : The Image of the Indigene in Canadian, Australian, and New Zealand Literatures* (1989)
- Eleanor Ty – *Unfastened : Globality and Asian North American Narratives* (2010)

UNIT-10 SUSANNA MOODIE : INDIAN SUMMAR

Structure

10.0 Objectives

10.1 Introduction

10.2 Susanna Moodie : Biographical Sketch

10.3 *Indian Summar* (Text)

10.3.1 Summary of the Poem

10.4 Analysis and Interpretation of the poem

10.5 Poetic Devices

10.6 Let us sum up

10.7 Questions

10.8 Further Readings

10.0 OBJECTIVES

In this unit, learners will be able to :

- Study the biography of the poet Susanna Moodie
- Know Susanna Moodie as a poet and her literary works
- Study the contribution of Susanna Moodie in new literature in English

10.1 INTRODUCTION

This unit will introduce you to **Susanna Moodie,** an English-born Canadian author who wrote about her experiences as a settler in Canada, which was a British colony at the time. She wrote her first children's book in 1822 and published other children's stories in London, including books about Spartacus and Jugurtha. In London she was also involved in the abolitionist organization Anti-Slavery Society, transcribing the narrative of the former Caribbean slave Mary Prince.

10.2 SUSANNA MODDIE : BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCH

Susanna Moodie was an English-born Canadian author who wrote about her experiences as a settler in Canada, which was a British colony at the time. Susanna Moodie was born in Bungay, on the River Waveney in Suffolk. She was one of the youngest sister in a family of writers, including Agnes Strickland, Jane Margaret Strickland and Catharine Parr Traill. On 4 April 1831, she married John Moodie, a retired officer who had served in the Napoleonic Wars. In 1832, with her husband, a British Army officer, and daughter, Moodie immigrated to Upper Canada. The family settled on a farm in Douro township, near Lakefield, north of Peterborough, where her brother Samuel Strickland (1804–1867) worked as a surveyor, and where artifacts are housed in a museum. Founded by Samuel, the museum was formerly an Anglican church and overlooks the Otonabee River where Susanna once canoed. It also displays artifacts concerning Samuel, as well as her elder sister and fellow writer Catharine, who married a friend of John Moodie's and immigrated to the same area a few weeks before Susanna and John.

Moodie continued to write in Canada, and her letters and journals contain valuable information about life in the colony. She observed life in what was then the backwoods of Ontario,

including native customs, the climate, the wildlife, relations between the Canadian population and recent American settlers, and the strong sense of community and the communal work, known as "bees" (which she, incidentally, hated). She suffered through the economic depression in 1836, and her husband served in the militia against William Lyon Mackenzie in the Upper Canada Rebellion in 1837.

As a middle-class Englishwoman, Moodie did not particularly enjoy "the bush", as she called it. In 1840, she and her husband moved to Belleville, which she referred to as "the clearings." She studied the Family Compact and became sympathetic to the moderate reformers led by Robert Baldwin, while remaining critical of radical reformers such as William Lyon Mackenzie. This caused problems for her husband, who shared her views, but, as sheriff of Belleville, had to work with members and supporters of the Family Compact.

In 1852, she published the memoir *Roughing it in the Bush*, detailing her experiences on the farm in the 1830s. In 1853, she published her second memoir, ***Life in the Clearings Versus the Bush,*** about her time in Belleville. She remained in Belleville, living with various family members (particularly her son Robert) after her husband's death, and lived to see Canadian Confederation. She died in Toronto, Ontario on 8 April 1885 and is buried in Belleville Cemetery next to her parents.

Her greatest literary success was *Roughing it in the Bush*. The inspiration for the memoir came from a suggestion by her editor that she writes an "emigrant's guide" for British people looking to move to Canada. Moodie wrote of the trials and tribulations she found as a "New Canadian", rather than the advantages to be had in the colony. She claimed that her intention was not to discourage immigrants but to prepare people like herself, raised in relative wealth and with no prior experience as farmers, for what life in Canada would be like.

Moodie taught her daughter Agnes how to paint flowers. Agnes later illustrated *Canadian **Wild Flowers***, published in 1868. Moodie's books and poetry inspired Margaret Atwood's collection of poetry, *The Journals of Susanna Moodie*, published in 1970. It was also an important influence on one of Atwood's later novels, *Alias Grace*, based on an account of murder convict Grace Marks which appeared in *Life in the Clearings Versus the Bush*. She has also been a source of inspiration for Carol Shields, who published a critical analysis of Moodie's work, *Susanna Moodie : Voice and Vision*. Additionally, the central character of Shields' novel, *Small Ceremonies*, is working on a biography of Moodie.

Works

- **Novels**
  - *Mark Hurdlestone* – 1853
  - *Flora Lyndsay* – 1854
  - *Matrimonial Speculations* – 1854
  - *Geoffrey Moncton* – 1855
  - *The World Before Them* – 1868
- **Poetry**
  - *Patriotic Songs* – 1830 (with Agnes Strickland)
  - *Enthusiasm and Other Poems* – 1831
- **Children's books**
  - *Spartacus* – 1822

- *The Little Quaker*
- *- The Sailor Brother*
- *The Little Prisoner*
- *Hugh Latimer* – 1828
- *Rowland Massingham*
- *Profession and Principle*

George Leatrim – 1875

- **Memoirs**
  - *Roughing it in the Bush* – 1852
  - *Life in the Backwoods*; A Sequel to *Roughing It in the Bush*
  - *Life in the Clearings Versus the Bush* – 1853
- Letters
  - ***Letters of a Lifetime*** – 1985 (edited by Carl Ballstadt, Elizabeth Hopkins, and Michael Peterman)

10.3 INDIAN SUMMER

(Text)

BY the purple haze that lies
On the distant rocky height,
By the deep blue of the skies,
By the smoky amber light
Through the forest arches streaming,
Where Nature on her throne sits dreaming,
And the sun is scarcely gleaming
Through the cloudlets, snowy white,
Winter's lovely herald greets us
Ere the ice-crowned tyrant meets us.
A mellow softness fills the air,
No breeze on wanton wing steals by
To break the holy quiet there,
Or make the waters fret and sigh,
Or the golden alders shiver
That bend to kiss the placid river,
Flowing on and on for ever.
But the little waves are sleeping,

O’er the pebbles slowly creeping,
That last night were fl ashing, leaping,
Driven by the restless breeze,
In lines of foam beneath yon trees.
Dressed in robes of gorgeous hue,
Brown and gold with crimson blent;
The forest to the waters blue
Its own enchanting tints has lent;
In their dark depths, life-like glowing,
We see a second forest growing,
Each pictured leaf and branch bestowing
A fairy grace to that twin wood,
Mirror’d within the crystal flood.
’Tis pleasant now in forest shades;
The Indian hunter strings his bow
To track through dark, entangling glades
The antler’d deer and bounding doe,
Or launch at night the birch canoe,
To spear the finny tribes that dwell
On sandy bank, in weedy cell,
Or pool the fisher knows right well—
Seen by the red and vivid glow
Of pine-torch at his vessel’s bow.
This dreamy Indian-summer day
Attunes the soul to tender sadness;
We love—but joy not in the ray :
It is not summer’s fervid gladness,
But a melancholy glory
Hovering softly round decay,
Like swan that sings her own sad story
Ere she floats in death away
The day declines; what splendid dyes,
In flickered waves of crimson driven,
Float o’er the saffron sea that lies

Glowing within the western heaven!

Oh, it is a peerless even!

See, the broad red sun is set,

But his rays are quivering yet

Through nature’s veil of violet,

Streaming bright o’er lake and hill;

But earth and forest lie so still,

It sendeth to the heart a chill;

We start to check the rising tear—

’Tis Beauty sleeping on her bier.

10.3.1 Summary of the poem

The poem is a descriptive and contemplative piece that explores the beauty and fleeting nature of an Indian summer day. The speaker describes the serene and peaceful atmosphere of the season, with its warm colors, gentle breezes, and reflective waters.

The poem begins by setting the scene, describing the ***purple haze, deep blue skies, and smoky amber light*** of the Indian summer landscape. The speaker notes that winter's arrival is imminent, but for now, the atmosphere is peaceful and serene.

As the poem progresses, the speaker describes the stillness and quiet of the Indian summer day. The speaker notes that the air is filled with a ***"mellow softness"*** and that the forest is reflected perfectly in the calm waters of the lake.

The poem also explores the theme of impermanence, noting that the Indian summer is a brief and fleeting moment of beauty. The speaker describes the little waves sleeping and creeping slowly over the pebbles, and notes that the forest's reflection in the lake creates a "second forest growing".

The speaker also describes the activities of the Indian hunter, who strings his bow and tracks the antler'd deer and bounding doe through the dark and entangling glades. The speaker notes that the hunter launches his birch canoe at night, spearing the finny tribes that dwell in the lake.

As the day declines, the speaker describes the splendid dyes of the sunset, with its flickered waves of crimson and saffron sea. The speaker notes that the earth and forest lie still, and that the atmosphere is filled with a sense of melancholy and decay.

The poem concludes with a sense of quiet reflection and appreciation for the beauty of the natural world. The speaker notes that the Indian summer landscape is a ***"peerless"*** sight, and that its beauty is something to be cherished and appreciated. The final image of the poem is of Beauty sleeping on her bier, emphasizing the fleeting and fragile nature of beauty.

Throughout the poem, the speaker uses vivid imagery, metaphor, and other poetic devices to create a sense of wonder and enchantment. The poem is a celebration of the beauty and fragility of life, and an invitation to appreciate and cherish the fleeting moments of beauty that we experience.

10.4 ANALYSIS AND INTERPRETATION OF THE POEM

By the purple haze that lies

On the distant Ricky height

By the deep blue of the skies

By the smoky amber light

The poem begins by describing the visual characteristics of Indian summer, using vivid imagery to paint a picture of the natural world. The ***"purple haze"*** creates a sense of mystery and atmosphere, while the ***"distant Ricky height"*** establishes a sense of depth and distance.

The *"deep blue of the skies"* contrasts with the *"purple haze"*, highlighting the complexity and nuance of the natural world. The "*smoky amber light"* adds a sense of warmth and coziness to the poem, evoking feelings of comfort and relaxation.

Poetic Devices

- The poem uses vivid imagery to describe the natural world, creating a sensory experience for the reader.

- The repetition of "By" at the beginning of each line creates a sense of rhythm and flow, drawing the reader through the poem.

Through the forest arches streaming

Where Nature on her throne sits dreaming

And the sun is scarcely gleaming

Through the cloudiest, snowy white

Winter's lovely greets us

Ere the ice-crowned tyrant meets us

The poem continues to describe the natural world, using vivid imagery to paint a picture of the forest and its surroundings. The *"forest arches streaming"* creates a sense of movement and energy, while *"Nature on her throne sits dreaming"* personifies nature as a monarch, emphasizing its power and beauty. The *"sun is scarcely gleaming"* suggests that winter is approaching, and the sun's warmth is fading. *The "cloudiest, snowy white"* creates a sense of contrast with the earlier descriptions of Indian summer, emphasizing the arrival of winter.

The poem describes winter as *"lovely"*, which may seem counterintuitive given the cold and darkness associated with the season. However, the use of *"lovely"* suggests that winter has its own beauty and charm, even if it's different from the warmth and vibrancy of Indian summer. The *"ice-crowned tyrant"* is a metaphor for winter's power and dominance, emphasizing its ability to transform the natural world. The poem explores the themes of seasonal change, nature's beauty, and the passage of time. The contrast between Indian summer and winter serves as a reminder of the cyclical nature of the seasons.

A mellow softness fills the air,

No breeze on wanton wing steals by

To break the holy quiet there,

Or make the waters fret and sigh,

Or the golden alders shiver

That bend to kiss the placid river,

Flowing on and on for ever.

This stanza is a beautiful description of a serene and peaceful natural setting.

The phrase *"mellow softness"* creates an image of a warm, gentle, and soothing atmosphere.

The word "fills" implies that this softness is pervasive and enveloping. The phrase *"wanton wing"* is a poetic way of describing a carefree or playful breeze. The word *"steals"* implies that even the breeze is respectful of the peaceful atmosphere and doesn't disrupt it.

The phrase *"holy quiet"* emphasizes the sacred and serene nature of the atmosphere. The word *"break"* implies that any disturbance would be a disruption of this peaceful state.

The phrase *"fret and sigh"* creates an image of gentle, soothing sounds, rather than turbulent or disturbing ones. The word "or" implies that even the water is calm and peaceful.

The phrase *"golden alders"* creates an image of beautiful, shimmering trees.

The word *"shiver"* implies a gentle, subtle movement, rather than a violent or dramatic one. The phrase *"bend to kiss"* creates an image of gentle, loving movement. The word *"placid"* emphasizes the calm and peaceful nature of the river.

The phrase *"flowing on and on"* creates an image of continuous, uninterrupted movement.

The word *"for ever"* emphasizes the timeless and eternal nature of the scene.

Overall, this stanza creates a peaceful and serene atmosphere, emphasizing the calm and gentle nature of the natural world.

But the little waves are sleeping,

O’er the pebbles slowly creeping,

That last night were fl ashing, leaping,

Driven by the restless breeze,

In lines of foam beneath yon trees.

Dressed in robes of gorgeous hue,

Brown and gold with crimson blent;

This stanza is a beautiful description of a peaceful and serene natural scene, specifically focusing on the gentle movement of waves and the vibrant colors of the surroundings.

The phrase ***"little waves"*** creates an image of small, gentle ripples on the water.

The word ***"sleeping"*** implies a state of calm and tranquility.

The phrase *"o'er the pebbles"* creates an image of the waves gently flowing over small rocks or stones. The word *"slowly creeping"* emphasizes the peaceful and gradual movement of the waves.

The phrase *"that last night"* creates a sense of contrast between the current peaceful state and the more turbulent conditions of the previous night. The words *"flashing, leaping"* create an image of energetic and dynamic movement.

The phrase *"driven by the restless breeze"* explains the reason for the turbulent movement of the waves the previous night. The word *"restless"* emphasizes the energetic and unpredictable nature of the breeze.

The phrase *"in lines of foam"* creates an image of the waves leaving behind a trail of white foam as they move. The phrase "beneath yon trees" creates a sense of location and setting, emphasizing the peaceful and serene atmosphere. The phrase *"dressed in robes"* creates an image of the natural surroundings being adorned with beautiful and vibrant colors. The phrase *"gorgeous hue"* emphasizes the stunning and impressive nature of these colors.

The phrase "brown and gold" creates an image of warm, earthy tones. The phrase *"with crimson blent"* adds a sense of vibrancy and energy to the description, emphasizing the blending of different colors to create a stunning visual effect.

Overall, this stanza creates a peaceful and serene atmosphere, emphasizing the gentle movement of the waves and the vibrant colors of the surroundings.

The forest to the waters blue
Its own enchanting tints has lent;
In their dark depths, life-like glowing,
We see a second forest growing,
Each pictured leaf and branch bestowing
A fairy grace to that twin wood,
Mirror’d within the crystal flood.
’Tis pleasant now in forest shades;
The Indian hunter strings his bow
To track through dark, entangling glades
The antler’d deer and bounding doe,
Or launch at night the birch canoe,
To spear the finny tribes that dwell
On sandy bank, in weedy cell,
Or pool the fisher knows right well—
Seen by the red and vivid glow
of pine-torch at his vessel’s bow.

This stanza is a beautiful description of a serene and enchanting forest landscape, with a focus on the reflection of the forest in the water and the activities of the Indian hunter.

The phrase *"waters blue"* creates an image of a calm and peaceful body of water. The phrase *"enchanting tints"* emphasizes the beautiful and captivating colors of the forest. The phrase *"dark depths"* creates an image of the mysterious and unknown.

The phrase *"life-like glowing"* emphasizes the vibrant and lifelike quality of the reflection. The phrase "second forest growing" creates an image of a mirrored or duplicate forest.

The phrase *"pictured leaf and branch"* emphasizes the detailed and intricate reflection of the forest. The phrase "fairy grace" adds a sense of enchantment and magic to the description.

The phrase "crystal flood" creates an image of a calm and peaceful body of water. The word *"mirror'd"* emphasizes the reflective quality of the water.

The phrase *"forest shades"* creates an image of a cool and peaceful forest environment.

The phrase *"Indian hunter"* creates an image of a skilled and experienced hunter. The phrase *"strings his bow"* emphasizes the hunter's preparation and readiness. The phrase *"dark, entangling glades"* creates an image of a dense and challenging forest environment.

The phrase *"antler'd deer and bounding doe"* emphasizes the hunter's prey and the excitement of the hunt. The phrase *"birch canoe"* creates an image of a lightweight and maneuverable boat. The phrase *"launch at night"* emphasizes the hunter's skill and bravery.

The phrase *"finny tribes"* creates an image of fish and other aquatic creatures. The phrase *"sandy bank, in weedy cell"* emphasizes the hunter's knowledge of the aquatic environment.

The phrase *"pool the fisher knows"* creates an image of a skilled and experienced fisherman.

The phrase *"right well"* emphasizes the fisherman's knowledge and expertise. The phrase *"red and vivid glow"* creates an image of a bright and intense light. The phrase *"pine-torch at his vessel's bow"* emphasizes the fisherman's use of light to navigate and hunt at night.

This dreamy Indian-summer day

Attunes the soul to tender sadness;

We love—but joy not in the ray :

It is not summer’s fervid gladness,

But a melancholy glory

Hovering softly round decay,

Like swan that sings her own sad story

Ere she floats in death away

This stanza is a beautiful and contemplative description of the Indian summer season, with a focus on the emotional and psychological impact it has on the human experience. The phrase "dreamy Indian-summer day" creates an image of a peaceful and serene atmosphere.The phrase "attunes the soul to tender sadness" suggests that the Indian summer season has a profound emotional impact, evoking feelings of melancholy and wistfulness.

The phrase "we love" emphasizes the deep affection and appreciation for the Indian summer season. The phrase "joy not in the ray" suggests that the joy experienced during this season is bittersweet, tempered by the knowledge that it is fleeting. The phrase "summer's fervid gladness" creates an image of the intense and vibrant joy associated with the summer season.

-The phrase "it is not" emphasizes the contrast between the Indian summer season and the traditional summer season.

- The phrase "melancholy glory" creates an image of a beautiful and poignant atmosphere, tinged with sadness.

- The phrase "hovering softly round decay" suggests that the Indian summer season is a fleeting moment of beauty, surrounded by the inevitability of decline and decay.

- The image of the swan singing its own sad song creates a powerful and evocative metaphor for the Indian summer season.

- The phrase "ere she floats in death away" suggests that the swan's song is a final, poignant expression of beauty and life, before it succumbs to mortality.

The day declines; what splendid dyes,

In flickered waves of crimson driven,

Float o’er the saffron sea that lies

Glowing within the western heaven!

Oh, it is a peerless even!

See, the broad red sun is set,

But his rays are quivering yet

Through nature's veil of violet,

Streaming bright o'er lake and hill;

But earth and forest lie so still,

It sendeth to the heart a chill;

We start to check the rising tear—

'Tis Beauty sleeping on her bier.

This stanza is a beautiful and evocative description of a sunset, with a focus on the emotional and aesthetic impact of the scene. The phrase *"day declines"* signals the beginning of the sunset. The phrase *"splendid dyes"* creates an image of vibrant and intense colors. The phrase *"flickered waves of crimson driven"* suggests a dynamic and energetic movement of color. The phrase *"saffron sea"* creates an image of a warm and golden-colored landscape. The phrase *"glowing within the western heaven"* emphasizes the radiant and ethereal quality of the sunset. The phrase *"peerless even"* emphasizes the uniqueness and beauty of the sunset. The phrase "broad red sun is set" signals the end of the sunset. The phrase *"his rays are quivering yet"* suggests a lingering energy and vitality.

The phrase "nature's veil of violet" creates an image of a delicate and ethereal atmosphere.

The phrase "streaming bright o'er lake and hill" emphasizes the widespread and radiant quality of the sunset's light.

The phrase "*earth and forest lie so still"* creates an image of a peaceful and serene landscape.

The phrase *"it sendeth to the heart a chill"* suggests a sense of melancholy or introspection.

The phrase *"we start to check the rising tear"* suggests a moment of emotional restraint or self-control. The phrase *"Beauty sleeping on her bier*" creates a powerful and evocative image, suggesting that the sunset's beauty is fleeting and mortal.

10.5 POETIC DEVICES

The Themes of the poem

1. **The Fleeting Nature of Beauty** : The poem highlights the brief and temporary nature of the Indian summer, symbolizing the transience of beauty and life.
2. **Appreciation for Nature** : The poem expresses a deep appreciation for the natural world and the beauty of the Indian summer.
3. **Melancholy and Nostalgia** : The poem has a melancholic tone, reflecting on the passing of time and the fleeting nature of beauty.
4. **Impermanence :** The poem touches on the theme of impermanence, noting that the Indian summer is a temporary phenomenon that will soon give way to the harsher realities of winter.
5. **Reflection and Contemplation** : The poem invites the reader to reflect on the beauty of the natural world and the fleeting nature of life.
6. **The Passage of Time :** The poem notes the passage of time and the changing of the seasons, symbolizing the inevitability of change and the fleeting nature of life.

7. **Beauty and Decay** : The poem touches on the theme of beauty and decay, noting that the Indian summer is a beautiful but temporary phenomenon that will soon give way to the decay of winter.

Imagery

The poem is rich in sensory details, with vivid descriptions of the natural world. The *"purple haze"* and *"smoky amber light"* create a dreamy, ethereal atmosphere, while *the "deep blue of the skies"* and "*cloudiest, snowy white"* emphasize the contrast between the warmth of Indian summer and the cold of winter.

"A mellow softness fills the air" (visual and tactile imagery)

"The forest to the waters blue / Its own enchanting tints has lent" (visual imagery)

"The broad red sun is set" (visual imagery)

"Nature's veil of violet" (visual imagery)

Symbolism : The Indian summer is a symbol of the fleeting nature of beauty and life.

Metaphor

"The forest is a second forest growing" (comparing the forest's reflection to a living, growing entity)

"Beauty sleeping on her bier" (comparing beauty to a deceased person, emphasizing its fleeting nature)

Here's a summary of the poem :

Simile

- "Like swan that sings her own sad story" (comparing the Indian summer to a swan's song)

Personification

- *"The forest... has lent / Its own enchanting tints"* (giving the forest human-like qualities)

- "*Beauty... sleeping on her bier"* (giving beauty human-like qualities)

Alliteration

- *"Softly stealing"* (repeating the "s" sound)

- "Flickered waves of crimson driven" (repeating the "f" and "cr" sounds)

Enjambment

- Many of the lines in the poem run on to the next without punctuation, creating a sense of flow and continuity.

- The Indian summer season is a symbol of the fleeting nature of beauty and life.

- The forest and its reflection are symbols of the beauty and wonder of nature.

Hyperbole

- "A peerless even" (exaggerating the beauty of the evening)

Allusion

- The comparison of the Indian summer to a swan's song may allude to the mythological association of swans with beauty, music, and death.

Tone

1. **Contemplative** : The poem has a contemplative tone, inviting the reader to reflect on the beauty of the Indian summer.
2. **Melancholic :** The poem also has a melancholic tone, acknowledging the fleeting nature of beauty and the passing of time.
3. **Appreciative** : The poem expresses a deep appreciation for the natural world and the beauty of the Indian summer.
4. **Reflective** : The poem has a reflective tone, inviting the reader to look back on the passing of time and the fleeting nature of beauty.

Mood

1. **Serene** : The poem creates a serene mood, evoking feelings of peace and tranquility.
2. **Nostalgic** : The poem also creates a nostalgic mood, inviting the reader to reflect on the passing of time and the fleeting nature of beauty.
3. **Wistful** : The poem has a wistful mood, acknowledging the impermanence of beauty and the passing of time.
4. **Dreamy** : The poem creates a dreamy mood, evoking feelings of wonder and enchantment.

Shifts in Tone and Mood

1. The poem begins with a contemplative tone, inviting the reader to reflect on the beauty of the Indian summer.
2. As the poem progresses, the tone shifts to a more melancholic one, acknowledging the fleeting nature of beauty and the passing of time.
3. The mood of the poem also shifts, from a serene and peaceful one to a more nostalgic and wistful one.

Overall, the tone and mood of the poem work together to create a reflective andcontemplative atmosphere, inviting the reader to appreciate the beauty of the Indian summer and reflect on the passing of time.

Structure

The structure of the poem "Indian Summer" by Susanna Moodie :

Stanza Structure

The poem consists of 6 stanzas, each with 4-6 lines. The stanzas are not uniform in terms of line length or rhyme scheme.

Line Structure

The lines in the poem vary in length, with some lines having 5-7 syllables and others having 10-12 syllables. The lines do not follow a consistent rhythm or meter.

Rhyme Scheme

The poem does not have a consistent rhyme scheme. Some stanzas have a loose rhyme scheme, while others do not rhyme at all.

Poetic Form

The poem does not conform to a specific poetic form, such as sonnet or ballad. It appears to be a lyrical poem, with a focus on the poet's personal reflections and emotions.

Use of Enjambment and Caesura

The poem uses enjambment (where a sentence or phrase continues into the next line without punctuation) and caesura (pauses within a line) to create a sense of flow and continuity.

Use of Imagery and Symbolism

The poem uses vivid imagery and symbolism to convey the poet's emotions and ideas. The Indian summer is a symbol of the fleeting nature of beauty and the passing of time.

Overall Structure

The overall structure of the poem is loose and lyrical, with a focus on the poet's personal reflections and emotions. The poem's use of imagery, symbolism, and poetic devices creates a rich and evocative texture.

10.6 Let us Sum Up

Susanna Moodie was an English-born Canadian pioneer and author who wrote realistic, insightful, often humorous accounts of life in the wilderness. In ***"Indian Summer",*** Susanna Moodie demonstrates her skill as a poet through her vivid and evocative descriptions of the natural world. The poem explores several themes, including the fleeting nature of beauty, the passage of time, and the importance of appreciating the present moment. Moodie's use of poetic devices, such as metaphor and personification, adds depth and complexity to the poem, while her formal, poetic language creates a sense of elegance and refinement. Overall, "***Indian Summer"*** is a beautiful and contemplative poem that showcases Moodie's skill as a poet and her deep appreciation for the natural world.

10.7 Questions

Q.1 Give brief life sketch of Susanna Moodie.

Q.2 Discuss the contribution of literary works of Susanna Moddie.

Q.3 Discuss the poetic device of the poem *Indian Summar.*

Q.4 Discuss the title of the poem *Indian Summar.*

Q.5 Write summary of the poem *Indian Summar*.

10.8 Further Readings

- *Bentley, Richard. "Roughing It in the Bush / Introduction to the Third Edition". Wikisource. Retrieved October 27, 2011.*
- *"Biographies - Susanna Moodie and Catherine Parr Traill". Collections Canada, Library and Archives of Canada. Retrieved October 27, 2011.*
- *Ballstadt, Carl. "Biography - Susanna Moodie". Poetry Foundation. Retrieved October 27, 2011.*
- *"Catherine Parr Traill". The Canadian Encyclopedia. Retrieved October 27, 2011.*
- *Ballstadt, Carl. "Biography - Susanna Moodie". Poetry Foundation. Retrieved October 27, 2011.*

Unit-11 MARGARET ATWOOD : *THE BLIND ASSASSIN*

Structure

11.0 Objectives

11.1 Introduction

11.2 Brief Outline of *The Blind Assassin*.

11.3 Tools of scholarship :

11.3.1 Plot Structure

11.3.2 Complexity of Characterisation

11.3.3 Narrative Technique

11.3.4 Themes and Motifs

11.4 Critical Reception

11.5 Let Us Sum up

11.6 Questions for Self-Assessment

11.7 Further Readings

11.0 OBJECTIVES

The objective of studying Margaret Atwood's *The Blind Assassin* in postgraduate courses is to enable students to critically engage with complex narrative structures, metafictional techniques, and feminist discourse of the novel. Through a close reading of, students will explore themes of memory, identity, gender, politics, historical trauma, and the interplay between fiction and reality. The course aims to develop analytical skills to interpret intertextuality and unreliable narration, while situating the novel within Canadian literature and postmodern literary traditions. By examining Atwood's layered storytelling, students will gain deeper insight into the construction of narrative voice and the socio-political implications of storytelling.

11.1 INTRODUCTION

Margaret Atwood's *The Blind Assassin* (2000) stands as a landmark literary achievement, celebrated widely for its narrative complexity, thematic depth, and profound social critiques. Awarded the prestigious Booker Prize in 2000, the novel intricately weaves together multiple narrative threads, including memoir, metafiction, and speculative fiction, creating a richly textured exploration of memory, gender politics, history, and storytelling. Atwood's distinctive narrative technique, characterized by layered storytelling, non-linear chronology, novel-within-novel and self-reflexivity, powerfully engages readers in questioning the nature of truth, reliability of memory, and societal power structures. Central characters such as Iris Chase Griffen, Laura Chase, and Richard Griffen embody complex human struggles against patriarchal oppression, moral complicity, and historical silencing, highlighting Atwood's nuanced characterization. Furthermore, the novel's recurring motifs—blindness, silence, confinement, and narrative construction—reinforce its exploration of personal and collective trauma, resistance, and empowerment. Critical reception has widely acknowledged the novel's exceptional literary merit, particularly noting Atwood's sophisticated blending of genres and incisive feminist perspectives. This study offers a comprehensive exploration of *The Blind Assassin*, critically examining its plot structure,

characterization, narrative techniques, major themes and motifs, and its reception among literary scholars, thereby illuminating its enduring significance within contemporary literature.

11.2 BRIEF OUTLINE OF THE BLIND ASSASSIN

Margaret Atwood's *The Blind Assassin* (2000), winner of the Booker Prize, is a deeply layered novel that weaves together three narrative threads : the memoir of an elderly woman named Iris Chase Griffen, the tragic story of her younger sister Laura Chase, and a science-fiction tale within a novel—narrated by a nameless man to his lover—which ultimately forms the "novel within the novel" also titled *The Blind Assassin*. These threads gradually intertwine to reveal the secrets, betrayals, and personal costs that define the lives of its central characters. Atwood's masterful interlacing of memory, history, and fiction constructs a profoundly moving meditation on power, gender, and voice. The story begins in the present day with the eighty-two-year-old Iris Chase Griffen reflecting on her life after the recent death of her long-estranged sister, Laura Chase. Laura, a mysterious and emotionally fragile woman, had driven her car off a bridge in 1945 in what was assumed to be a suicide. After her death, Laura became a posthumous literary sensation when a provocative novel titled *The Blind Assassin*—purportedly written by her—was published by Iris. The novel within the novel is an erotic science fiction fantasy narrated by a political fugitive to his lover, who is implied to be Laura. This embedded story seems to parallel and mask their real relationship, and its thematic resonance adds layers to the main narrative.

Iris's memoir takes the form of a long letter addressed to her estranged granddaughter Sabrina, whom she has not seen for years. Iris is now old, alone, and ailing in Port Ticonderoga, a fictional small town in Ontario, Canada. She begins recounting the history of the Chase family, beginning with her grandfather Benjamin Chase, who established a button factory and built a minor empire from it, and her father Norval Chase, a wounded World War I veteran who struggled to maintain the family's industrial legacy during the Great Depression. Iris and Laura are raised in relative isolation after their mother, Liliana, mother is Isis and Laura, dies when they are young. Iris is the elder, practical and obedient, while Laura is spiritually intense, intelligent, and unorthodox in her beliefs. Laura is profoundly shaped by religion and moral absolutism, often quoting scripture and exhibiting a black-and-white worldview. The sisters' sheltered existence is interrupted by the encroaching economic decline of their family business and the societal expectations placed upon them. To secure the financial survival of the Chase button factory and maintain their social status, Iris is married off at the age of eighteen to Richard E. Griffen, a wealthy, older Toronto industrialist and aspiring politician. Richard is a controlling and sadistic husband who subjects Iris to emotional and physical abuse, including marital rape. He is cold and politically ambitious, embodying the patriarchal and capitalist structures that Atwood critiques. His sister, Winifred Griffen Prior, is a manipulative and socially domineering woman who polices Iris's behaviour and dictates her role as a proper wife and social ornament. Iris's role in the Griffen household becomes stifling and unbearable, as she is cut off from her sister and denied autonomy.

Meanwhile, Laura, left behind in Port Ticonderoga, is tormented by her own experiences. She becomes entangled with Alex Thomas, a charismatic radical leftist and political fugitive accused of setting fire to factories during labour strikes. When Alex seeks refuge at the Chase home, Iris and Laura both develop feelings for him, but it is Iris who engages in a secret and passionate affair with him. Their relationship is intense but necessarily hidden due to Iris's marriage and Alex's political vulnerability. To protect her reputation and preserve her marriage façade, Iris distances herself from Alex, though she continues to care for him deeply. The memories of these secret meetings are layered with desire, shame, and guilt—an emotional burden Iris carries throughout her life. Alex flees Canada, and the sisters' lives continue under increasing strain. Laura's mental health begins to deteriorate under the pressure of her moral convictions and her knowledge of the abuses that Iris

suffers at the hands of Richard. Laura confronts Richard and threatens to expose him, after which she is institutionalized, suggesting Richard's influence and power over the medical and legal system. After her release, she becomes increasingly unmoored from reality. Richard's duplicity is further revealed when it is suggested that he exploited Laura, possibly even sexually abusing her. Iris discovers this horrifying possibility after Laura's death and begins to reassess her silence and complicity. Laura's car crash in 1945—at first seen as impulsive and inexplicable—now begins to emerge as a desperate act brought on by abuse, abandonment, and disillusionment.

After Laura's death, Iris reclaims some agency by publishing *The Blind Assassin* under Laura's name, knowing that the real author was Iris herself. This act of literary impersonation serves multiple purposes : it immortalizes Laura in a public mythology while also allowing Iris to speak her own truth obliquely, through fiction. The embedded science fiction story within the novel is, in fact, based on Iris's own relationship with Alex Thomas. It features a fugitive and his lover meeting in seedy hideouts, weaving science-fiction tales about a dystopian planet ruled by blind assassins, sacrificial virgins, and corrupt rulers. These tales mirror the real-life struggles of the characters and serve as metaphors for political oppression, gendered violence, and resistance. As Iris continues her memoir in the present day, she chronicles the downfall of Richard Griffen. She ultimately exposes his corruption and personal cruelty, including his role in silencing Laura. Richard dies of an apparent heart attack under ambiguous circumstances, but it is suggested that Iris played a role in engineering his disgrace and public downfall. Iris's husband dies, and she finally severs ties with the toxic Griffen legacy.

One of the most poignant and tragic elements of the narrative is Iris's estrangement from her daughter Aimee, who grows up emotionally neglected under the guardianship of Winifred after Iris is deemed an unfit mother. Aimee is raised with contempt for her mother and dies young under murky circumstances. Sabrina, Aimee's daughter and Iris's granddaughter, grows up unaware of the true story of her family and harbours resentment toward Iris, believing in the narrative propagated by Winifred. Much of Iris's memoir is thus an attempt to clarify this history and pass on the truth to Sabrina, hoping for reconciliation or at least understanding before her death. The novel ends with Iris nearing death and preparing the manuscript of her memoir for posthumous publication. She reflects on the limitations of memory, the burden of secrets, and the ways in which history is manipulated by those in power. Her final gesture is to give voice not only to herself but to Laura, Alex, and all those silenced by patriarchy, propriety, and social oppression. The final chapters reveal Iris as both the real author of *The Blind Assassin* and as a woman who chose, at great cost, to protect others while suppressing her own identity.

11.3 TOOLS OF SCHOLARSHIP

The following are some critical tools of scholarship that can enable us to understand the key elements of the novel :

11.3.1 Plot Structure

Margaret Atwood's *The Blind Assassin* (2000) is renowned not only for its compelling narrative and thematic complexity but also for its intricately designed and layered plot structure. Atwood employs a sophisticated blend of metafictional elements, nested narratives, nonlinear chronology, and multiple viewpoints, all intricately woven together to create a richly textured exploration of memory, truth, and storytelling itself. Atwood structures the novel around three interlocking narrative threads. The primary narrative is delivered by Iris Chase Griffen, an elderly woman reflecting on her tumultuous life. Her memoir-like narration, marked by a contemplative tone and reflective distance, unfolds from her isolated position in Port Ticonderoga. Iris's retrospective narrative serves as the overarching framework through which other narratives are

introduced and contextualized. Her storytelling is marked by temporal fluidity, as she moves back and forth between her past and present experiences, intermingling personal memories with broader historical events such as World Wars, the Great Depression, and societal transformations in Canada. This nonlinear narrative approach effectively mirrors the fragmented and subjective nature of memory itself, highlighting the unreliability of personal narratives and histories.

Nested within Iris's memoir is the second narrative layer : the fictional novel-within-the-novel, also titled *The Blind Assassin*, which Iris publishes posthumously under the name of her deceased sister Laura. Presented initially as Laura's novel, this narrative features a clandestine love affair between an unnamed man—a fugitive political radical—and his lover. Their encounters are clandestine, intensely romantic, and marked by secrecy. This embedded narrative introduces yet another layer of storytelling, a science-fiction fantasy in which the unnamed man narrates elaborate tales to his lover about the imaginary planet Zycron, with its ritualistic violence, oppression, and the enigmatic figure of a blind assassin. These speculative tales offer powerful allegorical reflections on the real-world concerns of the central characters—political resistance, gendered violence, and powerlessness. Atwood's decision to structure the narrative around these interconnected plots—memoir, fictional novel, and speculative allegory—enables the novel to explore the boundaries between fiction and reality. The interplay among these layers encourages readers to question the truthfulness and reliability of each narrative. It gradually becomes clear that the supposed fictional narratives carry coded truths that Iris, as the concealed author, employs to disclose painful personal experiences. Atwood thus underscores the act of storytelling as a means of resistance against silence and erasure. Through Iris's layered confessions and the concealed truths within the embedded stories, Atwood makes evident the struggles faced by women who have been silenced and marginalized in a patriarchal society.

Moreover, the plot structure significantly heightens suspense and narrative tension. The gradual revelation of critical details about Laura's death, Iris's marriage, the tragic fate of Alex Thomas, and the unsettling truth about Richard Griffen unfolds incrementally through each layer of the narrative. Atwood carefully parcels out these revelations, compelling readers to actively engage with the text, constantly reassessing their understanding of the characters' motivations and the reliability of their perspectives. The effect is a dynamic reading experience marked by discovery, reinterpretation, and reconsideration. This complexity is further deepened by Atwood's use of multiple temporal shifts. Iris's narrative does not proceed chronologically; rather, it alternates between past and present, strategically withholding crucial details that would clarify relationships and events. This nonlinear arrangement mirrors the fragmented nature of memory and trauma, emphasizing the novel's thematic focus on loss, repression, and regret. Iris's selective recollections reflect the process by which individuals reconstruct their pasts, confronting painful experiences through fragmented reminiscences rather than coherent sequences.

Furthermore, the plot structure of the novel emphasizes the metafictional nature of storytelling. Iris's act of writing serves as both confession and redemption, allowing her to reclaim agency over a narrative that was otherwise controlled and suppressed by external forces, particularly patriarchal and societal conventions. By embedding a fictional narrative within a memoir, Atwood demonstrates how stories can simultaneously conceal and reveal truths. Iris uses fiction strategically to mask her own vulnerabilities and protect her sister's reputation, even as she ultimately reveals their collective pain and suffering. This dual function of storytelling as both concealment and revelation positions narrative itself as a powerful mechanism for psychological survival and moral reckoning. Atwood's structural choices also foreground the novel's critique of power dynamics inherent in traditional narratives. The juxtaposition of Iris's authoritative narrative voice against the embedded narratives exposes how dominant narratives silence marginalized voices. The speculative tales within the novel-within-the-novel metaphorically represent oppressive power structures—blind

assassins symbolize authority figures who carry out violent acts without moral accountability. These allegorical layers parallel Iris's real-life struggles against patriarchal oppression and social silencing, reinforcing the novel's feminist critiques.

11.3.2 Complexity of Characterisation

Margaret Atwood's Booker Prize-winning novel *The Blind Assassin* is notable for its profound and nuanced characterisation, vividly capturing complex psychological profiles that reflect intricate social, historical, and gendered contexts. Through a carefully constructed cast of characters, Atwood explores themes of identity, memory, power, gender relations, trauma, and resistance. The characters in this novel are neither mere literary devices nor stereotypes but multidimensional, psychologically intricate individuals whose narratives illuminate broader societal realities and historical conditions. Atwood's skilful development of these characters underscores the novel's thematic richness, offering deep insights into the human condition, especially from the perspective of women navigating oppressive patriarchal structures.

The novel's primary narrative voice belongs to Iris Chase Griffen, whose life forms the emotional and narrative centre of the text. Iris's characterisation is marked by deep introspection, emotional complexity, and moral ambiguity. Initially presented as elderly and reflective, Iris's retrospective account spans nearly a century, providing insights into the historical and personal traumas she experienced. Her character evolves significantly over the novel, as readers encounter Iris first as a compliant daughter and later as a deeply unhappy wife and mother, eventually becoming an agent of quiet resistance. Atwood's characterisation of Iris is particularly powerful in its portrayal of the internalised constraints placed on women of her era—especially expectations of obedience, silence, and sacrifice. Iris embodies the emotional and psychological toll of sustained oppression, manifesting in passivity and silence that, paradoxically, evolve into a quietly defiant voice. Her journey towards self-awareness and her ultimate assertion of agency through writing and disclosure illustrate Atwood's critical exploration of gendered power dynamics and female subjectivity. Contrasting Iris is her younger sister, Laura Chase, whose characterisation is central to the emotional and thematic resonance of the novel. Laura emerges as a complex blend of vulnerability, idealism, and moral absolutism. She is portrayed as enigmatic, spiritually intense, and often misunderstood. Her character is built upon layers of symbolism and mystery, reinforced by her tragic and enigmatic death. Laura's inner world, her deeply-held beliefs, and her profound moral compass starkly contrast with Iris's pragmatic realism. Through Laura, Atwood introduces themes of innocence corrupted by patriarchal violence and institutional abuse, symbolically rendering her as a martyr figure who represents purity, spiritual clarity, and uncompromising truthfulness. Laura's characterisation underscores the destructive power of societal conventions and patriarchal exploitation, offering a poignant critique of the ways society marginalises individuals who resist conformity. And, Winifred Griffen Prior, Richard's sister, represents another dimension of oppressive power. Her characterisation as socially ambitious, manipulative, and controlling highlights the role that women can also play in perpetuating patriarchal oppression. Winifred's insistence on conformity to societal norms, her policing of Iris's behaviour, and her ruthless pursuit of family status illustrate how patriarchal ideologies are internalised and perpetuated by women themselves. Atwood skilfully develops Winifred as a chilling embodiment of social conformity, complicity, and oppressive maternalism. Her character underscores the complexities of power dynamics, revealing the intricate ways that oppression operates beyond simplistic gender binaries.

Alex Thomas, the radical political activist who becomes romantically entangled with Iris, is another pivotal figure whose characterisation is central to the novel's thematic structure. Alex represents the voice of political resistance and ideological rebellion against systemic oppression and corruption. Atwood's portrayal of Alex is deliberately elusive; he remains a shadowy figure defined

largely by his beliefs, idealism, and tragic fate rather than by explicit personal detail. His fragmented identity serves as a narrative metaphor, embodying the silenced and marginalised political dissident whose story is partially erased by dominant historical narratives. His presence significantly influences Iris's psychological and emotional trajectory, becoming both catalyst and symbol of resistance to oppressive structures—political, social, and personal. While Richard E. Griffen, Iris's husband, is depicted with remarkable clarity as a representative of oppressive patriarchal authority and capitalist dominance. His characterisation is starkly negative, yet deeply realistic. Atwood portrays him as manipulative, controlling, and devoid of genuine empathy or compassion. His marriage to Iris symbolises the transactional relationships common within patriarchal society, where women are commodified to maintain economic or social power. Richard's abusive, domineering personality and his obsession with control reflect broader societal dynamics of male privilege, highlighting the destructive power structures that silence women's voices and diminish their autonomy. Richard's character serves as a critical representation of patriarchal villainy, foregrounding the feminist critique central to Atwood's narrative.

Norval Chase, Iris and Laura's father, is rendered as a distant and emotionally damaged patriarchal figure, a casualty of war trauma and economic decline. His inability to emotionally support his daughters reinforces themes of abandonment, isolation, and the emotional scars inflicted by patriarchal detachment. Norval's characterisation adds depth to the psychological landscape of the novel, illustrating the generational transmission of trauma and silence. Two additional characters whose characterisations add symbolic depth are Iris's daughter Aimee and granddaughter Sabrina. Their marginal presences, emotionally distant yet profoundly impactful, highlight themes of maternal loss, generational disconnection, and estrangement. Aimee's tragic life, shaped by emotional neglect and oppressive familial dynamics, represents the collateral damage of patriarchal oppression and maternal silence. Sabrina's alienation from Iris represents the emotional cost of silence and secrecy, underscoring Atwood's thematic focus on the enduring impacts of familial trauma. Significantly, the unnamed lovers in the embedded novel-within-a-novel—the unnamed man and woman—also offer crucial symbolic characterisation. Though less explicitly developed, their roles resonate thematically, metaphorically reflecting the real-world characters' emotional dynamics and societal constraints. The fugitive's radical political ideals and the woman's clandestine rebellion parallel Iris's own quiet rebellion, making them essential to the thematic cohesion of the novel.

11.3.3 Narrative Technique

Margaret Atwood's *The Blind Assassin* (2000) is celebrated not only for its profound thematic depth but also for its intricate and sophisticated narrative techniques. The novel exemplifies a masterful use of narrative experimentation, metafiction, multiple perspectives, and nonlinear storytelling, all contributing significantly to its critical acclaim and thematic resonance. Atwood strategically employs these narrative devices to explore the complexities of memory, truth, identity, and gendered oppression. The novel's narrative structure operates on multiple levels simultaneously, which allows for a nuanced portrayal of the interplay between individual and collective histories, personal trauma, and the fluid nature of truth. One of the most striking narrative techniques in the novel is Atwood's use of a layered, or nested, narrative structure. The novel is composed of three intertwined narrative threads : first, Iris Chase Griffen's memoir; second, a novel-within-the-novel, purportedly authored by Iris's sister Laura Chase; and third, an embedded science fiction story narrated by the male protagonist within this inner novel. Each of these narrative layers provides distinctive insights and functions to deepen readers' engagement with the characters' experiences. Iris's retrospective narrative is introspective, personal, and confessional, providing readers with insights into her subjective memory and consciousness. By contrast, the novel attributed to Laura is more elusive, constructed as a clandestine and anonymous romance entwined with speculative

fantasy. Atwood's careful construction of these multiple narrative layers enriches the novel's complexity and thematic coherence, effectively highlighting how storytelling itself is used as a tool of empowerment, concealment, and revelation.

The novel's use of metafiction—where the text self-consciously draws attention to its own status as a fictional construct—is another significant narrative device. By embedding a fictional novel within Iris's memoir, Atwood explores the porous boundaries between reality and fiction, truth and fabrication. This self-reflexive approach foregrounds the novel's thematic concerns with the act of writing itself, emphasizing narrative as a powerful medium through which personal truths can be expressed, hidden traumas revealed, and identities reconstructed. Iris's decision to publish the novel under Laura's name further enhances the metafictional aspect, problematizing authorship and identity, and compelling readers to continually reconsider the authenticity of each narrative layer. The metafictional dimension thus serves to interrogate narrative authority, complicating straightforward interpretations of truth and fiction. Atwood also employs a nonlinear temporal structure, repeatedly shifting between past and present. Iris's narrative moves fluidly and unpredictably through time, mirroring the fragmented and associative patterns of memory. This deliberate manipulation of chronology reflects the psychological processes of remembering and forgetting, repression, and selective recall. The nonlinear approach is particularly effective in maintaining narrative suspense, as key details about the characters' lives and relationships are gradually and strategically revealed. This fragmented presentation of events compels readers to actively reconstruct meaning from partial, sometimes contradictory, accounts, thereby reinforcing the novel's exploration of the subjective and elusive nature of truth and memory.

Moreover, Atwood's technique of employing an unreliable narrator further deepens the novel's complexity. Iris, as the principal narrator, is inherently subjective, her narrative shaped by personal biases, selective memory, and emotional trauma. Her reliability is continuously in question, as she withholds critical information, reveals details strategically, and reconstructs her past through a lens influenced by guilt, regret, and loss. The reader, consequently, must remain alert to the gaps, omissions, and silences in Iris's narrative, actively participating in the interpretation of events. Iris's unreliability thus becomes integral to the narrative's thematic examination of how stories are constructed, and how history itself is often a partial or distorted record shaped by personal and political interests. Another critical narrative strategy Atwood employs is intertextuality. The embedded science fiction stories narrated by the male protagonist within the inner novel resonate allegorically with the main narrative's historical, social, and political themes. Through these speculative tales about the imaginary planet Zycron, Atwood comments symbolically on broader issues such as oppression, gender-based violence, and the politics of domination. These intertextual stories function not only as narrative diversions but also as thematic amplifications, providing metaphoric reflections of the realities faced by Iris and Laura, and offering oblique yet powerful critiques of social and political injustices. This layered intertextuality invites readers to connect multiple levels of meaning, thereby enriching interpretative possibilities.

11.3.4 Themes and Motifs

Margaret Atwood's Booker Prize-winning novel *The Blind Assassin* (2000) is acclaimed for its deep engagement with complex and intersecting themes such as memory, gender oppression, storytelling, historical trauma, and the power dynamics embedded within personal and social relationships. Through carefully crafted motifs and symbolically resonant images, Atwood meticulously examines the interplay of these themes, producing a powerful critique of patriarchal society, historical amnesia, and personal complicity. One of the novel's central themes is memory and history. Atwood explores how memory is subjective, fragmented, and often manipulated by those in power. Iris Chase Griffen, the central narrator, reconstructs her past through memoir,

offering readers a narrative layered with omissions, distortions, and silences. Iris's memoir is not simply personal recollection but an attempt to reclaim and correct history, especially regarding her sister Laura's tragic life and death. Atwood thus underscores the fragility and unreliability of memory, highlighting how historical truths are frequently rewritten or silenced by dominant societal narratives. The motif of fragmented memories—illustrated by the nonlinear, reflective structure of Iris's narration—reinforces the novel's exploration of history as partial and contingent, shaped by individual biases and power relations.

Gender oppression and feminist critique form another significant thematic core of the novel. Atwood critically examines the gender dynamics of early twentieth-century Canadian society, depicting women's subjugation within marriage, family, and broader societal structures. Iris's forced marriage to Richard Griffen exemplifies the commodification and subordination of women within patriarchal capitalism. Richard's control and abuse of Iris symbolize broader systemic oppression, as Iris's individuality, autonomy, and voice are suppressed in service of male power and social prestige. Laura Chase's institutionalization and ultimate suicide further illustrate the brutal consequences women face when resisting patriarchal control. The novel's repeated imagery of confinement, isolation, and domestic entrapment reinforces this feminist critique, vividly symbolizing the emotional and physical imprisonment imposed on women by patriarchal conventions. Closely connected to gender oppression is the theme of silencing and giving voice and agency. Throughout the novel, women's voices are systematically marginalized or erased. Iris, for much of her life, remains silenced by societal expectations and marital abuse; Laura's voice is suppressed through institutionalization and exploitation. Atwood strategically uses storytelling as a motif to explore this silencing. The novel-within-the-novel structure, wherein Iris anonymously publishes her story under Laura's name, represents a powerful reclamation of voice and agency. Through this act, Iris breaks her imposed silence and confronts the patriarchal system responsible for her sister's suffering. Thus, Atwood positions narrative itself as a powerful means of reclaiming silenced voices, a tool of resistance against oppressive power structures.

The motif of blindness and sight is a recurring and symbolically charged element throughout the novel. The novel's title, *The Blind Assassin*, explicitly foregrounds blindness as a metaphor for moral complicity, ignorance, and the wilful refusal to see truth. Characters frequently fail to recognize or acknowledge abuses, injustices, and cruelties occurring around them, symbolizing society's collective blindness to oppression and exploitation. Iris herself embodies this metaphor, initially blind or wilfully oblivious to Richard's abuse, Laura's trauma, and the violence embedded within her privileged existence. Over time, however, Iris's gradual awakening—her progression from blindness to clarity—represents her moral journey towards self-awareness, accountability, and eventual resistance. Atwood thus uses blindness metaphorically to critique society's collective refusal to acknowledge systemic injustice and oppression. Further, storytelling and narrative construction constitute a pivotal thematic and structural motif in the novel. Atwood repeatedly emphasizes the constructed nature of narrative, exploring how storytelling can both reveal and conceal truths. The embedded science fiction narratives within the novel symbolize political oppression and resistance, mirroring and amplifying real-world struggles faced by Iris, Laura, and Alex Thomas. Atwood's metafictional technique emphasizes that narrative is never neutral or objective but inherently political, shaped by individual and collective biases. By foregrounding narrative construction, Atwood highlights the role stories play in constructing identities, legitimizing power, and contesting dominant ideologies.

Additionally, the novel explores the intersection of personal trauma and historical upheaval. Iris's individual trauma—stemming from abusive marriage, familial dysfunction, and loss—parallels broader historical traumas such as World Wars, economic collapse, and labour unrest. Atwood

skilfully intertwines personal and collective histories, suggesting that individual suffering is inseparable from broader socio-political contexts. Iris's narrative thus becomes symbolic of national and historical trauma, as personal grief and loss reflect larger historical forces. This thematic intersection underscores Atwood's profound critique of social structures that perpetuate individual and collective trauma. Loss and regret are other prominent emotional themes permeating the novel. Iris's narrative is suffused with profound sorrow, regret, and a pervasive sense of loss—of family, love, innocence, and opportunities for meaningful resistance. Iris's reflective voice carries a melancholic tone, suggesting deep remorse over personal complicity in the oppression of others, particularly Laura. Atwood employs motifs such as photographs, letters, and artifacts of the past to symbolize the irretrievable nature of loss and the enduring pain of regret. This emphasis on loss underscores the novel's exploration of the psychological and emotional costs of complicity and silence. Finally, the motif of social class and power features significantly throughout the novel. Richard Griffen and Winifred represent the affluent elite who exert power over others, exploiting economic privilege to control Iris and manipulate societal narratives. Alex Thomas, conversely, represents political resistance against class oppression, embodying marginalized voices struggling against exploitation. Atwood's depiction of class dynamics highlights the pervasive inequalities and injustices entrenched in capitalist societies, positioning class conflict as a central element of individual and collective suffering.

11.4 CRITICAL RECEPTION

Margaret Atwood's novel *The Blind Assassin* (2000) was met with significant critical acclaim upon publication, quickly becoming one of her most celebrated works. Awarded the Booker Prize in the same year, the novel drew widespread praise for its intricate narrative structure, psychological depth, and profound thematic exploration of memory, gender, history, and storytelling. Critical reception underscored Atwood's sophisticated narrative layering, particularly the novel-within-the-novel device, which critics considered both technically innovative and thematically powerful. Michiko Kakutani from *The New York Times* highlighted the novel's complexity, describing it as an ambitious work that intertwines historical realities with deeply personal narratives. Kakutani praised Atwood's ability to explore the intersection between private pain and collective trauma, arguing that the book masterfully revealed "the personal wounds inflicted by broader societal forces." Similarly, literary critic Elaine Showalter noted that Atwood skilfully uses her narrative to question historical reliability, emphasizing the subjective nature of memory and the power structures embedded within storytelling. Feminist literary critics particularly lauded Atwood's exploration of gender oppression, recognizing the novel as a powerful critique of patriarchal power structures. Coral Ann Howells, a prominent Atwood scholar, observed that the novel compellingly portrays women's lives constrained by societal expectations and patriarchal violence. She argued that Atwood's nuanced characterization of Iris and Laura Chase vividly illustrates women's struggles against societal norms that enforce silence, complicity, and submission. Howells emphasized that through Iris's eventual reclaiming of voice and authorship, Atwood poignantly depicts the possibility—and necessity—of resistance and empowerment through narrative. Moreover, critics frequently discussed Atwood's adeptness in using speculative fiction within the text, noting how the science-fiction narratives embedded in the novel allegorically represent oppression and resistance. Critic Linda Hutcheon described this technique as a hallmark of Atwood's postmodern approach, highlighting her ability to fuse genres to create multi-layered interpretations. Hutcheon argued that the speculative narratives served not only as imaginative escapes but also as potent social critiques, reflecting historical realities and amplifying the novel's examination of power dynamics.

11.5 LET US SUM UP

Margaret Atwood's *The Blind Assassin* (2000) is a Booker Prize-winning novel acclaimed for its intricate narrative structure, thematic richness, and profound critique of societal and gendered oppression. Through a complex interplay of memoir, fiction-within-fiction, and speculative storytelling, Atwood masterfully examines memory, historical trauma, patriarchal control, and the silencing of women. Central characters Iris and Laura Chase embody struggles against oppression and moral complicity, their narratives highlighting themes of blindness, confinement, agency, and resistance. The novel's layered narrative structure and nonlinear chronology powerfully evoke the subjective nature of truth and memory, inviting readers to question historical and personal authenticity. Critics universally praise Atwood's sophisticated characterisation, feminist insights, and narrative innovation, while acknowledging occasional complexity in its layered storytelling. Ultimately, *The Blind Assassin* emerges as a significant literary work, effectively revealing storytelling as both an act of resistance against silencing and a powerful instrument for reclaiming individual and collective truths.

11.6 QUESTIONS

1. How does Atwood's complex narrative structure—including memoir, fiction-within-fiction, and speculative storytelling—affect your understanding of truth, memory, and historical reality within the novel?
2. In what ways do Iris and Laura Chase represent differing responses to patriarchal oppression, and how do their interactions shape the novel's feminist critique?
3. Examine the motif of blindness in the novel. How does it symbolize broader themes of moral complicity, societal ignorance, and personal awakening?
4. Discuss the role of storytelling and narrative voice in the novel. How do Iris's and Laura's narratives demonstrate the power dynamics associated with authorship, voice, and silence?
5. Critically analyse Richard Griffen's character. What does his portrayal reveal about Atwood's commentary on gender, power, and societal structures in early twentieth-century Canada?

11.7 FURTHER READINGS

- Howells, Coral Ann. *Margaret Atwood* (2nd edition). Palgrave Macmillan, 2005.
- Cooke, Nathalie. (Ed.). *Margaret Atwood : A Critical Companion.* Greenwood Press, 2004.
- Wilson, Sharon Rose. *Margaret Atwood's Textual Assassinations : Recent Poetry and Fiction.* Ohio State University Press, 2003.
- Nischik, Reingard M. (Ed.). *Margaret Atwood : Works and Impact.* Camden House, 2002.
- Bloom, Harold. (Ed.). *Margaret Atwood's The Blind Assassin.* Chelsea House Publishers, 2009.

UNIT-12 TONI MORRISON : *BELOVED*

Structure

12.0 Objectives

12.1 Introduction

12.2 Toni Morrison : Life and Literay works

12.2.1 Life

12.2.2 Literary works

12.3 The Significance of the title *Beloved*

12.4 Summary of the Novel *Beloved*

12.5 Plot Summary of the novel

12.6 Major themes of the Novel

12.6.1 Mother – daughter Relationship

12.6.2 Psychological Effects of slavery

12.6.3 Definition of manhood

12.6.4 Alter Reconstruction

12.6.5 Family Relationship

12.6.6 Pain

12.6.7 Heroism

12.7 Major characters

12.7.1 Se the

12.7.2 Beloved

12.7.3 Paul

12.7.4 Dever

12.7.5 Baby suggs

12.7.6 Halle

12.7.7 School Teacher

12.7.8 Amy Denver

12.8 Structure and Techniques of the novel *Beloved*

12.8.1 Structure

12.8.2 Technique

12.9 Let Us Sum Up

12.10 Questions

12.11 Further Readings

12.0 OBJECTIVES

After going through this unit, you will be able :

- Know American novelist Toni Morrison's life and works
- Discuss Significance of the title of the novel *Beloved*
- Analysis Summary of the Novel *Beloved*
- Describe the major themes of the novel
- Discuss characters of the novel
- Analyse Structure and Techniques of the novel *Beloved*

12.1 INTRODUCTION

This unit will introduce you to *Beloved*, a novel by Toni Morrison, novelist and editor, an American writer noted for her examination of Black experience (particularly Black female experience) within the Black community. Morrison won the Pulitzer Prize for *Beloved* (1987). She was awarded the Nobel Prize in Literature in 1993.

Toni Morrison is one of the leading 20th Century African American Woman novelists, who have endeavoured to articulate problems of prejudice and discrimination through her fictional world. Being African American woman, Morrison boldly presents African American feminist consciousness through her literary endeavour where she strongly expresses her philosophy as a feminist. She is awakened and conscious about women's life and problems and believes that human consciousness is the peer experience. Consequently, her novels manifest and highlight Black women who are doubly differentiated in the form of male standard and poverty as well as Euro-American women's standard. In her work, Morrison has explored the experience and roles of black women in a racist and male dominated society. The unique cultural inheritance of African Americans is the centre of her complex and multi-layered narratives.

12.2 TONI MORRISON : LIFE AND LITERARY WORKS

12.2.1 Life

Chloe Anthony Wofford Morrison (née Chloe Ardelia Wofford; February 18, 1931 – August 5, 2019), known as Toni Morrison, was an American novelist and editor. Born and raised in Lorain, Ohio, Morrison graduated from Howard University in 1953 with a B.A. in English. Morrison earned a master's degree in American Literature from Cornell University in 1955. In 1957, she returned to Howard University, was married, and had two children before divorcing in 1964. Morrison became the first black female editor in fiction at Random House in New York City in the late 1960s. She developed her own reputation as an author in the 1970s and '80s.

The National Endowment for the Humanities selected Morrison for the Jefferson Lecture, the U.S. federal government's highest honor for achievement in the humanities, in 1996. She was honored with the National Book Foundation's Medal of Distinguished Contribution to American Letters the same year. President Barack Obama presented her with the Presidential Medal of Freedom on May 29, 2012. She received the PEN/Saul Bellow Award for Achievement in American Fiction in 2016. Morrison was inducted into the National Women's Hall of Fame in 2020.

Early Years

Toni Morrison was born Chloe Ardelia Wofford, the second of four children from a working-class, Black family, in Lorain, Ohio, to Ramah (née Willis) and George Wofford. Her mother was

born in Greenville, Alabama, and moved north with her family as a child. She was a homemaker and a devout member of the African Methodist Episcopal Church. George Wofford grew up in Cartersville, Georgia. Morrison's parents instilled in her a sense of heritage and language through telling traditional African-American folktales, ghost stories, and singing songs. She read frequently as a child; among her favorite authors were Jane Austen and Leo Tolstoy.

Morrison became a Catholic at the age of 12 and took the baptismal name Anthony (after Anthony of Padua), which led to her nickname, Toni. Attending Lorain High School, she was on the debate team, the yearbook staff, and in the drama club.

12.2.2 Literary Works

- **First writing and Teaching (1970-1986)**

Morrison had begun writing fiction as part of an informal group of poets and writers at Howard University who met to discuss their work. She attended one meeting with a short story about a Black girl who longed to have blue eyes. Morrison later developed the story as her first novel, *The Bluest Eye*, getting up every morning at 4 am to write, while raising two children on her own. Morrison's portrait on the first-edition dust jacket of *The Bluest Eye* (1970)

In 1975, Morrison's second novel Sula (1973), about a friendship between two Black women, was nominated for the National Book Award. Her third novel, Song of Solomon (1977), follows the life of Macon "Milkman" Dead III, from birth to adulthood, as he discovers his heritage. At its 1979 commencement ceremonies, Barnard College awarded Morrison its highest honor, the Barnard Medal of Distinction.

Morrison gave her next novel, Tar Baby (1981), a contemporary setting. In it, a looks-obsessed fashion model, Jadine, falls in love with Son, a penniless drifter who feels at ease with being Black. Resigning from Random House in 1983, Morrison left publishing to devote more time to writing, while living in a converted boathouse on the Hudson River in Nyack, New York. She taught English at two branches of the State University of New York (SUNY) and at Rutgers University's New Brunswick campus. In 1984, she was appointed to an Albert Schweitzer chair at the University at Albany, SUNY.

Morrison's first play, Dreaming Emmett, is about the 1955 murder by white men of Black teenager Emmett Till. The play was commissioned by the New York State Writers Institute at the State University of New York at Albany, where she was teaching at the time. It was produced in 1986 by Capital Repertory Theatre and directed by Gilbert Moses. Morrison was also a visiting professor at Bard College from 1986 to 1988.

- **Beloved Trilogy and the Nobel Prize (1987- 1998)**

In 1987, Morrison published her most celebrated novel, ***Beloved.*** It was inspired by the true story of an enslaved African-American woman, Margaret Garner, whose story Morrison had discovered when compiling ***The Black Book.*** Garner had escaped slavery but was pursued by slave hunters. Facing a return to slavery, Garner killed her two-year-old daughter but was captured before she could kill herself. Morrison's novel imagines the dead baby returning as a ghost, Beloved, to haunt her mother and family. *Beloved* won the Pulitzer Prize for Fiction.It also won an Anisfield-Wolf Book Award.

Beloved is the first of three novels about love and African-American history, sometimes called the *Beloved* Trilogy In 1992, Morrison also published her first book of literary criticism, Playing in the Dark : Whiteness and the Literary Imagination (1992), an examination of the African-American presence in White American literature. Before the third novel of the *Beloved* Trilogy was published, Morrison was awarded the Nobel Prize in Literature in 1993.

- **Early 21st century**

Morrison continued to explore different art forms, such as providing texts for original scores of classical music. She collaborated with André Previn on the song cycle Honey and Rue, which premiered with Kathleen Battle in January 1992, and on *Four Songs*, premiered at Carnegie Hall with Sylvia McNair in November 1994. Both *Sweet Talk : Four Songs on Text* and *Spirits In the Well* (1997) were written for Jessye Norman with music by Richard Danielpour, and, alongside Maya Angelou and Clarissa Pinkola Estés, Morrison provided the text for composer Judith Weir's *woman.life.song* commissioned by Carnegie Hall for Jessye Norman, which premiered in April 2000.

Morrison returned to Margaret Garner's life story, the basis of her novel *Beloved*, to write the libretto for a new opera, *Margaret Garner*. Completed in 2002, with music by Richard Danielpour, the opera was premièred on May 7, 2005, at the Detroit Opera House with Denyce Graves in the title role.*Love*, Morrison's first novel since *Paradise*, came out in 2003. In 2004, she put together a children's book called *Remember* to mark the 50th anniversary of the Brown v. Board of Education Supreme Court decision in 1954 that declared racially segregated public schools to be unconstitutional.

From 1997 to 2003, Morrison was an Andrew D. White Professor-at-Large at Cornell University. In June 2005, the University of Oxford awarded Morrison an honorary Doctor of Letters degree.

In the spring 2006, *The New York Times Book Review* named *Beloved* the best work of American fiction published in the previous 25 years, as chosen by a selection of prominent writers, literary critics, and editors. In his essay about the choice, In November 2006, Morrison visited the Louvre museum in Paris as the second in its *"Grand Invité"* program to guest-curate a month-long series of events across the arts on the theme of "The Foreigner's Home", about which *The New York Times* said : *"In tapping her own African-American culture, Ms. Morrison is eager to credit 'foreigners' with enriching the countries where they settle."*· Morrison's novel A Mercy, released in 2008, is set in the Virginia colonies of 1682.

- **Princeton Years**

From 1989 until her retirement in 2006, Morrison held the Robert F. Goheen Chair in the Humanities at Princeton University. She said she did not think much of modern fiction writers who reference their own lives instead of inventing new material, and she used to tell her creative writing students. Though based in the Creative Writing Program at Princeton, Morrison did not regularly offer writing workshops to students after the late 1990s, a fact that earned her some criticism. Rather, she conceived and developed the Princeton Atelier, a program that brings together students with writers and performing artists. Together the students and the artists produce works of art that are presented to the public after a semester of collaboration.

Inspired by her curatorship at the Louvre Museum, Morrison returned to Princeton in the fall 2008 to lead a small seminar, also entitled "The Foreigner's Home".On November 17, 2017, Princeton University dedicated Morrison Hall (a building previously called West College) in her honor.

- **Final Years : 2010-2019**

In May 2010, Morrison appeared at PEN World Voices for a conversation with Marlene van Niekerk and Kwame Anthony Appiah about South African literature and specifically van Niekerk's 2004 novel *Agaat*.

Morrison wrote books for children with her younger son, Slade Morrison, who was a painter and a musician. Slade died of pancreatic cancer on December 22, 2010, aged 45,[when Morrison's novel Home (2012) was half-completed.

In May 2011, Morrison received an Honorary Doctor of Letters degree from Rutgers University–New Brunswick. During the commencement ceremony, she delivered a speech on the "pursuit of life, liberty, meaningfulness, integrity, and truth".

Morrison died at Montefiore Medical Center in The Bronx, New York City, on August 5, 2019, from complications of pneumonia. She was 88 years old.A memorial tribute was held on November 21, 2019, at the Cathedral of St. John the Divine in the Morningside Heights neighborhood of Manhattan in New York City. Morrison was eulogized by, among others, Oprah Winfrey, Angela Davis, Michael Ondaatje, David Remnick, Fran Lebowitz, Ta-Nehisi Coates, and Edwidge Danticat. Background.

12.3 THE SINGNIFICANCE OF THE TITLE *BELOVED*

The story revolves around Sethe, an escaped enslaved woman, and her haunted past.The ghost of Sethe's dead daughter, known as Beloved, returns to haunt her, and the novel delves into the impact of slavery on individuals and communities. The novel explores themes of love and loss in profound ways. The relationships between characters, especially the maternal love between Sethe and her children, are central to the narrative.

The name *Beloved* carries connotations of affection, endearment, and significance. By naming the character Beloved, Morrison imbues her with a weighty and symbolic role. The character becomes a symbol of the past, of the haunting memories, and the complex emotions tied to Sethe's history as a former slave.

Background

The book's dedication reads *"Sixty Million and more"*, referring to the Africans and their descendants who died as a result of the Atlantic slave trade.The book's epigraph is Romans.

12.4 SUMMARY OF THE NOVEL *BELOVED*

Beloved**,** novel by Toni Morrison, published in 1987.. The novel is based on the true story of a Black slave woman, Margaret Garner, who in 1856 escaped from a Kentucky plantation with her husband, Robert, and their children. They sought refuge in Ohio, but their owner and law officers soon caught up with the family. Before their recapture, Margaret killed her young daughter to prevent her return to slavery. In the novel, Sethe is also a passionately devoted mother, who flees with her children from an abusive owner known as “schoolteacher.” They are caught, and, in an act of supreme love and sacrifice, she too tries to kill her children to keep them from slavery. Only her two-year-old daughter dies, and the schoolteacher, believing that Sethe is crazy, decides not to take her back. Sethe later has “Beloved” inscribed on her daughter’s tombstone. Although she had intended for it to read “Dearly Beloved,” she did not have the energy to “pay” for two words (each word cost her 10 minutes of sex with the engraver).

These events are revealed in flashbacks, as the novel opens in 1873, with Sethe and her teenage daughter, Denver, living in Ohio, where their house at 124 Bluestone Road is haunted by the angry ghost of the child Sethe killed. The hauntings are alleviated by the arrival of Paul D, a man so ravaged by his slave past that he keeps his feelings in the “tobacco bin” of his heart. He worked on the same plantation as Sethe, and the two begin a relationship. A brief period of relative calm ends with the appearance of a young woman who says that her name is Beloved. She knows things that suggest she is the reincarnation of Sethe’s lost daughter. Sethe is obsessed with assuaging her guilt

and tries to placate the increasingly demanding and manipulative Beloved. At one point, Beloved seduces Paul D. After learning that Sethe killed her daughter, he leaves.

The situation at 124 Bluestone worsens, as Sethe loses her job and becomes completely fixated on Beloved, who is soon revealed to be pregnant. While the lonely and largely housebound Denver initially befriends Beloved, she begins to grow concerned. She finally dares to venture outside in order to ask the community for help, and she is given food and a job. As the local women attempt to stage an exorcism, Denver's employer arrives to take her to work, and Sethe mistakes him for "schoolteacher" and tries to attack him with an ice pick. The other women restrain her, and during the commotion Beloved disappears. Paul D later returns to the grieving Sethe, promising to care for her, and Denver continues to thrive in the outside world.

Beloved offers a harrowing look at slavery and its lasting impact. The intensely shocking and moving narrative was written in a variety of voices and lengthy fragmentary monologues, which, like the character of Beloved herself, are sometimes ambiguous. Morrison's beautiful language and intense imagery, however, were rightly celebrated in this classic work.

12.5 PLOT

Beloved begins in 1873 in Cincinnati, Ohio, with Sethe, a formerly enslaved woman, and her 18-year-old daughter, Denver, who live at 124 Bluestone Road. The site has been haunted for years by what they believe is the ghost of Sethe's eldest daughter. Denver is shy, friendless, and housebound. Sethe's sons, Howard and Buglar, ran away from home by the age of 13, which she believes was due to the ghost. Baby Suggs, the mother of Sethe's husband, Halle, died soon after the boys fled, eight years before the start of the novel.

One day, Paul D, one of the enslaved men from Sweet Home, the plantation where Sethe, Halle, Baby Suggs, and several others were once enslaved, arrives at Sethe's home. He forces out the spirit, receiving Denver's contempt for driving away her only companion, but persuades them to leave the house together for the first time in years for a carnival. Upon returning home, they find a young woman sitting in front of the house who calls herself Beloved. Paul D is suspicious and warns Sethe, but she is charmed by the young woman and ignores him. Denver is eager to care for the sickly Beloved, whom she begins to believe is her older sister come back.

Paul D begins to feel increasingly uncomfortable in the house and that he is being driven out. One night, Paul D is cornered by Beloved, who tells him to touch her on her "inside part." While they have sex, his mind is filled with horrific memories from his past, including the sexual violence inflicted upon him and the other men while in a chain gang. Paul D tries to tell Sethe about it, but cannot. Instead, he says that he wants her pregnant. Sethe is afraid to have to live for a baby. When Paul D tells friends at work about his plans to start a new family, they react fearfully. One, Stamp Paid, reveals the reason for the community's rejection of Sethe by showing Paul D a newspaper clipping of an article about a fugitive woman who killed her child.

Paul D confronts Sethe, who tells him that after escaping and joining her children at 124, four horsemen came to return her children and her to a life of slavery. Sethe, terrified of returning to Sweet Home and its vicious manager Schoolteacher, ran to the woodshed with her children to kill them, but only managed to kill her eldest daughter. Sethe says that she was "trying to put my babies where they would be safe". Paul D leaves, telling her her love is "too thick" and chastising that "you've got two feet, not four." Sethe retorts that "thin love is no love", adamant that she did the right thing.

Sethe comes to believe that Beloved is the daughter she had killed, as "BELOVED" was all she could afford to have engraved on her tombstone. She is overjoyed, holding onto a hope that

Halle and her sons will come back and they will all be a family together. Out of guilt, she begins to spend all of her time and money on Beloved to please her and try to explain her actions, and loses her job. Beloved becomes angry and demanding, throwing tantrums when she does not get her way. Beloved's presence consumes Sethe's life. She hardly eats, while Beloved grows bigger and bigger, eventually taking the form of a pregnant woman. Denver reveals her fear of Sethe, having known that she killed Beloved, but not having understood why, and that her brothers shared this fear and ran away due to it. Sethe and Beloved's voices merge until indistinguishable, and Denver observes that Sethe becomes more like a child, while Beloved seems more like the mother.

Denver reaches out to the Black community for help, from whom they had been isolated because of envy of Baby Suggs' privilege and horror at Sethe killing her two-year-old daughter. Local women come to the house to exorcise Beloved. At the same time, their White landlord, Mr. Bodwin, arrives to offer a job to Denver, who had asked him for work. Not knowing this, Sethe attacks him with an ice pick, thinking he was Schoolteacher coming back for her daughter. The village women and Denver hold her back and Beloved disappears.

Denver becomes a working member of the community, and Paul D returns to a bed-ridden Sethe, who, devastated at Beloved's disappearance, remorsefully tells him that Beloved was her *"best thing"*. He replies that Sethe is her own "best thing", leaving her questioning, *"Me? Me?"* As time goes on, those who knew Beloved gradually forget her until all traces of her are gone.

12.6 MAJOR THEMES OF THE NOVEL *BELOVED*

12.6.1 Mother-Daughter Relationship

The maternal bonds between Sethe and her children inhibit her own individuation and prevent the development of herself. Sethe develops a dangerous maternal passion that results in killing one daughter, her own "best self." Her surviving daughter becomes estranged from the Black community. Both outcomes result from Sethe trying to salvage her "fantasy of the future," her children, from a life in slavery.

In Ohio, Sethe fails to recognize her daughter Denver's need for interaction with the Black community to enter into womanhood. At the end of the novel, Denver succeeds in establishing her own self and embarking on her individuation with the help of Beloved. Sethe only becomes individuated after Beloved's exorcism. Then, she is free to fully accept the first relationship that is completely "for her," her relationship with Paul D. This relationship relieves her from the self-destruction she was causing based on her maternal bonds with her children.

Beloved and Sethe are both emotionally impaired, which comes from Sethe having been enslaved. Under slavery, mothers lost their children, with devastating consequences for both. Baby Suggs dealt with this by refusing to become close with her children and remembering what she could of them, but Sethe tried to hold onto them and fight for them, to the point of killing them so they could be free. Sethe was traumatized by having had her milk stolen, unable to form the symbolic bond between herself and her daughter by feeding her.

12.6.2 Psychological Effects of Slavery

Because of the suffering under slavery, most former slaves tried to repress these memories in an attempt to forget the past. This repression and dissociation from the past causes a fragmentation of the self and a loss of true identity. Sethe, Paul D., and Denver all suffered a loss of self, which could only be remedied when they were able to reconcile their pasts and memories of earlier identities. Beloved serves to remind these characters of their repressed memories, eventually leading to the reintegration of their selves.

Slavery splits a person into a fragmented figure. The identity, consisting of painful memories and unspeakable past, denied and kept at bay, becomes a "self that is no self". To heal and humanize, one must constitute it in a language, reorganize the painful events, and retell the painful memories. As a result of suffering, the "self" becomes subject to a violent practice of making and unmaking, once acknowledged by an audience becomes real. Sethe, Paul D, and Baby Suggs, who all fall short of such realization, are unable to remake themselves by trying to keep their pasts at bay. The "self" is located in a word, defined by others. The power lies in the audience, or more precisely, in the word—once the word changes, so does the identity. All of the characters in *Beloved* face the challenge of an unmade self, composed of their "rememories" and defined by perceptions and language. The barrier that keeps them from remaking of the self is the desire for an "uncomplicated past" and the fear that remembering will lead them to "a place they couldn't get back from".

12.6.3 Definition of Manhood

The discussion of manhood and masculinity is foreshadowed by the dominant meaning of Sethe's story. *Beloved* depicts slavery in two main emotions : Love and Self-Preservation; however, Morrison does more than depict emotions.

The author accurately depicts the horrors of enslavement and its effects to communicate the morals of manhood. It also distorts a man from himself. Morrison revealed different pathways to the meaning of manhood by her stylistic devices. She established new information for understanding the legacy of slavery best depicted through stylistic devices. To understand Paul D's perception of manhood, Morrison deliberately inserts his half-formed words and thoughts, to provide the audience a taste of what is going on inside his mind. Yet, throughout the novel, Paul D's depiction of manhood was being constantly challenged by the norms and values of white culture. The author demonstrates the distinctions between Western and African values, and how the dialogue between the two values is heard through juxtaposition and allusions. Scholar Zakiyyah Iman Jackson has argued that Paul D's reduced manhood emerges in relation to a discourse of animality. Morrison maneuvered her message through the social atmosphere of her words, which was further highlighted by the character's motives and actions.

Paul D is a victim of racism in that his dreams and goals are so high that he will never be able to achieve them because of racism. He thought he earned his right to reach each of his goals because of his sacrifices and what he has been through, that society would pay him back and allow him to do what his heart desired.

12.6.4 After Reconstruction

During the Reconstruction era, Jim Crow laws were put in place to limit the movement and involvement of African Americans in the White-dominant society. Black men during this time had to establish their own identity, which may seem impossible due to all the limitations put upon them. Many Black men, like Paul D, struggled to find their meaning in their society and achieving their goals because of the "disabilities" that constrained them to a certain part of the social hierarchy.

In *Beloved*, Stamp Paid observes Paul D sitting on the base of the church steps "… liquor bottle in hand, stripped of the very maleness that enables him to caress and love the wounded Sethe…" (132). Throughout the novel, Paul D is sitting on a base of some sort or a foundation like a tree stub or the steps, for instance. This exemplifies his place in society. Black men are the foundation of society because without their hard labor, the white men would not profit. They were coerced into the society where they were deemed "lower-status" because of the color of their skin.

12.6.5 Family Relationship

Family relationships are an instrumental element of *Beloved,* which help visualize the stress and the dismantlement of African-American families in this era. The slavery system did not allow

African Americans to have rights to themselves, their family, their belongings, or their children. So, Sethe killing Beloved was deemed a peaceful act because Sethe believed that killing her daughter was saving her. By doing this, their family is divided and fragmented, much like the time in which they were living. After the Emancipation Proclamation was signed, formerly enslaved families were broken and bruised because of the hardships they faced while they were enslaved.

Since enslaved people could not participate in societal events, they put their faith and trust in the supernatural. They performed rituals and prayed to their god or multiple gods.

In the novel, Beloved, who was murdered at the hands of her mother Sethe, haunts Sethe. For example, Sethe, Denver, and Paul D go to the neighborhood carnival, which happens to be Sethe's first social outing since killing her daughter. When they return home, Beloved appears at the house. Throughout the novel, Sethe believes that the person claiming to be Beloved is her daughter that she killed 18 years prior - a scenario that shows how [fractured] family relationships are used to display the mental strife the protagonist faces.

12.6.6 Pain

The pain throughout this novel is universal because everyone involved in slavery was heavily scarred, whether that be physically, mentally, sociologically, or psychologically. Some of the characters tend to "romanticize" their pain, in a way that each experience is a turning point in one's life. This concept is played throughout history in early Christian contemplative tradition and African-American blues tradition.

Beloved is a book of the systematic torture that people who had been enslaved had to deal with after the Emancipation Proclamation. Therefore, in this novel, the narrative is like a complex labyrinth because all the characters have been "stripped away" from their voices, their narratives, their language in a way that their sense of self is diminished. Also, all the characters have had different experiences with slavery, which is why their stories and their narratives are distinct from each other.

For example, Sethe keeps repeating what a White girl said about her scars on her back, calling them "a Choke-cherry tree. Trunk, branches, and even leaves". She repeats this to everyone, suggesting she is trying to find the beauty in her scar, even when they caused her extreme pain. Paul D and Baby Suggs both look away in disgust and deny this description of Sethe's scars.Sethe does the same with Beloved. The memory of her ghost-like daughter plays a role of memory, grief, and spite that separates Sethe and her late daughter. For instance, Beloved stays in the house with Paul D and Sethe. A home is a place of vulnerability, where the heart lies. Paul D and Baby Suggs both suggest that Beloved is not invited into the home, but Sethe says otherwise because she sees Beloved, all grown and alive, instead of the pain of when Sethe murdered her.At the end of the book, Beloved is gone and Paul D encourages Sethe to love herself instead.

12.6.7 Heroism

Developing Sethe not as a conventional hero but as an individual capable of allowing those she cares for to break from the shackles of the past, Morrison depicts Sethe as a certain definition of heroism. Sethe's decision to kill her own child, Beloved, is thoroughly scorned by the community, despite her fear that Schoolteacher is coming to take her family back into slavery. Yet Sethe herself never doubts her own veracity, justifying, “It ain’t my job to know what’s worse. It’s my job to know what is and to keep them away from what I know is terrible. I did that” (194). Sethe contrasts the role society proclaims for her, to refrain from murdering her children and try to deal with the problem of Schoolteacher's arrival peacefully, and the role she assumes for herself, to kill her children to ensure that they will not be forced to experience the same venomous anguish of life as a slave. From Sethe's point of view, the only method that would have resulted in the complete safety

of her children was to kill her children and "keep them away from what [she] know[s] is terrible," because death is far more preferable to life back in the confines of slavery. Beyond just having the courage to stand up for what she believes in, Sethe also demonstrates her heroism by helping Paul D deal with his own painful past. When he visits Sethe near the end of the novel, Paul D reminisces about "Her tenderness about his neck jewelry — its three wands, like attentive baby rattlers, curving two feet into the air. How she never mentioned or looked at it, so he did not have to feel the shame of being collared like a beast. Only this woman Sethe could have left him his manhood like that. "He wants to put his story next to hers" (322). Paul D's intimate experiences with the iron bit have changed him forever, stripping him of his masculinity and contributing to a deep mental storm tormenting him from within. Morrison utilizes metaphor to compare the iron bit to "three wands, like attentive baby rattlers, curving two feet into the air," underscoring that the venomous influence of the iron bit, much like the bite of a rattlesnake, strikes in three different ways, damaging physical, cognitive, and emotional abilities. Paul D draws support from Sethe "never mention[ing] or look[ing]" at his scars, but more so, this allows him to retain his own manhood, which to Paul D defines the very basis of his character.

Although Sethe defies opposition to her heroic acts of freeing others from their past, Denver defies the confinements of her past, allowing her to help Sethe escape Beloved's parasitism that keeps her from a livable life and foreseeable future. Feeling trapped by her isolation at 124 Bluestone Road, Denver is challenged by the concept of leaving Sethe and Beloved behind, needing the courage to set foot beyond the house to seek the aid of the community she was once a part of. As Sethe and Beloved remained trapped in the house, the tipping point of heroism for Denver comes when she realizes "neither Beloved nor Sethe seemed to care what the next day might bring. Denver knew it was on her. "She would have to leave the yard; step off the edge of the world, leave the two behind and go ask somebody for help" (286). By using the metaphorical image of Denver "step[ing] off the edge of the world," to describe Denver leaving "the yard" in an effort to rewrite society's conceptions of her isolation and Sethe's horrible past actions, Morrison elucidates her courage to leave the only world she knows to "ask somebody for help." Also realizing that Sethe and Beloved did not "seem to care what the next day might bring," Denver recognizes that she must free her mother from the past's reach to encourage her to plan for the "next day" and for a future beyond Beloved's grasp. Overcoming her preconceptions of the outside community allows Denver to surpass Morrison's threshold of heroism, rescuing Sethe from the suppressive grip of the past through Beloved. When Beloved's influence becomes more and more detrimental to the environment of 124 Bluestone Road and Sethe's outlook on life, Denver does not hesitate to thrust herself into a motherly role and care for her mother. Her actions inspire Ella to form a group of women to exorcise Beloved from the community, and she describes**,** "For Sethe it was as though the Clearing had come to her with all its heat and simmering leaves, where the voices of women searched for the right combination, the key the code, the sound that broke the back of words. Building voice upon voice until they found it, and when they did it was a wave of sound wide enough to sound deep water and knock the pods off chestnut trees. It broke over Sethe and she trembled like the baptized in its wash" (308). Morrison refers back to the image of the Clearing to highlight how Denver has assumed the positive role of Baby Suggs in the community, supporting and inspiring the people of the community to work towards the greater good. Morrison then compares the voices of the praying woman to a wave of sound that could even "knock the pods off chestnut trees," highlighting the complete extent of power a united community truly holds. In the wake of this spiritually pure experience, Sethe "tremble[s] like the baptized," showcasing how she has been, to some extent, cleansed of the taint of Beloved by Denver's courageous actions.

Through her characterization of both Sethe and Denver as unlikely heroes capable of surpassing adversities in order to help their loved ones escape the haunting of their past, Morrison

may be emphasizing that heroism is defined not by supernatural powers or acts of unparalleled valor, but by the courageous intent to overcome the assertive preconceptions of society in order to ensure the greater good and positively influence on others in the process. As her experience in slavery came to define her life as a free woman, Sethe wallowed in her past, becoming a hero only when she allowed those she loved to escape their own burdens from the de-humanizing effects of slavery. Denver, on the other hand, breaks free of her past isolation in order to help Sethe seek a future beyond the constraints of her past. Morrison highlights that individuals have the ability to act with heroism, choosing to bring others out of the desolation of their past burden. Such a phenomenon can be enacted in current society by resisting the ideals of society, but rather, standing up for own beliefs to find heroism in the face of great opposition.

12.7 MAJOR CHARACTERS

12.7.1 Sethe

Sethe is the protagonist of the novel. She escaped slavery from a plantation called Sweet Home. She lives in the house named 124 (a house on 124 Bluestone Rd., but referred to only as "124") which is believed to be haunted because she killed her infant child there. Her two sons have fled because of the haunting, and she resides in the house with her daughter Denver. She is motherly and will do anything to protect her children from suffering the same abuses she experienced when she was enslaved. She is greatly influenced by her repression of the trauma she endured. She lives with ***"a tree on her back",*** scars from being whipped. Her character is resilient, yet defined by her traumatic past. She was 19 years old when Denver was born, making her birth year to be 1836.

12.7.2 Beloved

The opaque understanding of Beloved is central to the novel. She is a young woman who mysteriously appears from a body of water near Sethe's house, and is discovered soaking wet on the doorstep by Sethe, Paul D, and Denver, on their return from visiting the fair; they take her in. She is widely believed to be the murdered baby who haunted 124, as the haunting ends when she arrives, and in many ways she behaves like a child. As also mentioned, a young woman enslaved by a White man nearby had escaped, and Beloved recounts stories of past slaves, including Sethe's mother. Morrison stated that the character Beloved is the daughter Sethe killed. The murdered baby was unnamed, so her name is derived from the engraving on Sethe's murdered baby's tombstone, which simply read ***"Beloved"*** because Sethe could not afford to engrave the word ***"Dearly"*** or anything else. Beloved becomes a catalyst to bring repressed trauma of the family to the surface, but also creates madness in the house and slowly depletes Sethe.

12.7.3 Paul

Paul D retains his slave name; most of the enslaved men at Sweet Home were named Paul. He also retains many painful memories from enslavement and being forced to live in a chain gang, he had been moving around continuously before arriving at 124. He has a ***"tobacco tin"*** for a heart, in which he contains his painful memories, until Beloved opens it. Years after their time together at Sweet Home, Paul D and Sethe reunite and begin a romantic relationship. He acts fatherly towards Denver and is the first to be suspicious of Beloved. Despite their long past, he fails to understand Sethe fully because of her motherhood and because of the many years that had passed since.

12.7.4 Denver

Denver is Sethe's only child who remains at 124. Isolated from her community after Beloved's killing, Denver forms a close bond with her mother. Upon Beloved's arrival, Denver watches as her sister's ghost begins to exhibit demonic activity. Although introduced as a childish

character, Denver develops into a protective woman throughout the novel. In the final chapters, Denver fights not only for her personal independence, but also for her mother's wellbeing, breaking the cycle of isolation at 124. She is 18 years old at the beginning of the novel.

12.7.5 Baby Suggs

Baby Suggs is Sethe's mother-in-law. Her son Halle worked to buy her freedom, after which she travels to Cincinnati and establishes herself as a respected leader in the community, preaching for the Black people to love themselves because other people will not. This respect turns sour after she turns some food into a feast, earning their envy, as well as Sethe's act of infanticide. Baby Suggs retires to her bed, where she thinks about pretty colors for the rest of her life. She dies at 70 in the beginning of the book, 8 years before the main events.

12.7.6 Halle

Halle is the son of Baby Suggs, the husband of Sethe and father of her children. Sethe and he were married in Sweet Home, yet they got separated during her escape. He is only mentioned in flashbacks. Paul D was the last to see Halle, churning butter at Sweet Home. He is presumed to have gone mad after seeing residents of Sweet Home violating Sethe. He is hardworking and good, qualities that Paul D sees in Denver at the end of the book, but ones that Baby Suggs fears make him a target.

12.7.8 School Teacher

Schoolteacher is the primary discipliner, violent, abusive, and cruel to the people he enslaved at Sweet Home, whom he views as animals. He comes for Sethe following her escape, but she kills her daughter and is arrested, instead.

12.7.9 Amy Denver

Amy Denver is a young white girl who finds Sethe desperately trying to make her way to safety after her escape from Sweet Home, trying to get to Boston herself. Sethe is extremely pregnant at the time, and her feet are bleeding badly from the travel. Amy helps nurture her and deliver Sethe's daughter on a small boat, and Sethe names the child Denver after her.

12.8 STRUCTURE AND TECHNIQUES OF THE NOVEL *BELOVED*

12.8.1 Structure

The novel, *Beloved* is divided into three sections. Each section begins with a description of the house in which the main characters live. Through a series of flashbacks and dialogues in the present, readers learn about major events in the lives of people, who have been all but ruined by slavery. This structure's seven main parts include the exposition, rising action, climax, falling action resolution, denouement, and themes. The four point story structure refers to the setup (introducing characters and the setting), the inciting incident (event that starts the story's main conflict), the climax (the peak of the story where the main conflict is addressed), and the resolution (conclusion and tying up of loose ends)

The plot structure of the novel *Beloved* follows two different stories. The first story takes place in present time, which is the year 1873, in Cincinnati, Ohio. The second story unfolds through flashbacks that tell of events that transpired in the past eighteen years. A plot structure outlines a series of events, each of which unfolds as a sequence of cause and effects across the beginning , middle and end of a story.

12.8.2 Techniques

- **Symbolism**

Within ‘Beloved,’ symbols abound, every laden with layers of meaning. From the haunting presence of the titular character to the red ribbon that binds Sethe to her past, these symbols serve touchstones, guiding readers through the novel’s thematic space.

The red roses that line the road to the carnival serve to herald the carnival's arrival in town and announce the beginning of Sethe, Denver, and Paul D's new life together; yet they also stink of death. The red rooster signifies manhood to Paul D, but it is a manhood that Paul D himself has been denied.

- **Point of View**

Morrison employs a multifaceted technique to point of view, weaving together the perspectives of characters to create a wealthy tapestry of voices. Through this method, readers gain perception into the complex inner lives of characters, deepening their knowledge of their motivations and struggles.

- **Foreshadowing and Flashback**

Central to Morrison’s approach are the techniques of foreshadowing and flashback. By shifting between past and present, she creates an experience of anxiety and suspense, drawing readers deeper into the mystery whilst additionally illuminating the characters’ shared history.

- **Setting**

The novel, *Beloved* mainly takes place in Cincinnati, Ohio, in the year 1873 with Sethe, a formaly ensalved women, and her 18-year-old daughter, Denver, who live at 124 Bluestone Road, though the novel also features numerous flashbacks to the Sweet Home plantation in Kentucky and to a prison camp in Alfred, Georgia.

Beloved employs a traditional gothic setting, as Sethe and her only remaining child, Denver, live alone in a house haunted by the ghost of Sethe’s dead beby. Prior to her child's death, the house is a place of joy and gathering, a place where people come to be healed and find solace and solidarity.

- **Literary devices**

Within 'Beloved,' Morrison deftly employs a myriad of narrative techniques, along with Symbolism, foreshadowing, factor of view, and flashback. Each serves a awesome purpose in illuminating topics and deepening its resonance with readers.

- **Tone**

The tone of Beloved is elegiac, which means mournful or sad. The title of the novel itself suggests its elegiac tone.

- **Themes Explored through Narrative Techniques**

The story revolves around Sethe, an escaped enslaved woman, and her haunted past.The ghost of Sethe's dead daughter, known as Beloved, returns to haunt her, and the novel delves into the impact of slavery on individuals and communities. The novel explores themes of love and loss in profound ways. The relationships between characters, especially the maternal love between Sethe and her children, are central to the narrative.

- **Trauma and Memory**

At the heart of ‘Beloved’ lies the haunting legacy of slavery and its impact and reminiscence. Through her narrative techniques, Morrison captures the visceral horror of this trauma, inviting readers to endure witness to the scars it leaves.

- **Identity and Belonging**

Central to ‘Beloved’ is the subject of love and loss, depicted via the lens of Sethe’s dating together with her children and the specter that haunts her. Through narrative techniques which include flashback and imagery, Morrison conjures up the emotion, inviting readers to ponder the power of affection inside the face of adversity.

- **Love and Loss**

Central to ‘Beloved’ is the topic of love and loss, depicted through the lens of Sethe’s relationship with her children and the specter that haunts her. Through narrative techniques which include flashback and imagery, Morrison conjures up the profound of human emotion, inviting readers to contemplate the power of affection inside the face of adversity. In *Beloved,*Toni Morrison weaves a story tapestry that is as complex as it’s far profound, employing a myriad of narrative strategies to discover troubles of trauma, identification, and love. Through her storytelling, Morrison challenges readers to confront the complexities, inviting us to undergo witness to the iconic power of the human spirit. As we journey via the pages of *Beloved,* accomplishing deep literary analysis, we’re reminded of the transformative power of literature and the immortal legacy of people who dare to talk reality. Morrison crafted a timeless masterpiece that maintains to resonate with readers to nowadays.

12.9 LET US SUM UP

The novel is based on the true story of a Black slave woman, Margaret Garner, who in 1856 escaped from a Kentucky plantation with her husband, Robert, and their children. When US Marshals apprehended the family under the Fugitive Slave Act, Margaret Garner murdered one of her children, a daughter, rather than see her enslaved again.They sought refuge in Ohio, but their owner and law officers soon caught up with the family.

The novel *Beloved* is to recuperate a history that had been lost to the ravages of forced silences and willed forgetfulness. Morrison writes Sethe's story with the voices of a people who historically have been denied the power of language. Beloved explores the physical, emotional, and spiritual devastation wrought by slavery, a devastation that continues to haunt those characters who are former slaves even in freedom.

Beloved is presented as an allegorical figure. Whether she is Sethe's daughter, Sethe's mother, or a representative of all of slavery's victims, Beloved represents the past returned to haunt the present. The characters' confrontations with Beloved and, consequently, their pasts, are complex.

12.10 QUESTIONS

Q1. Discuss a brief bio-sketch of Novelist of Toni Morrison

Q2. Write a short note on her literary works.

Q3. Discuss the major themes of the novel, ‘Beloved’.

Q4. Focus and elaborate of the characters of the novel ‘Beloved’.

Q5. Discuss the structure of the novel , ‘Beloved’.

Q6. Discuss the significance of the title ‘Beloved’.

Q7. Analize the techniques of the novel , ‘Beloved’.

Q8. Summarize briefly the novel in your own words.

12.11 FURTHER READINGS

- Goulimar, Pelagia, "Beloved (1987)", in *Toni Morrison*, Routledge, 2011, p. 81.
- Hevesi, Dennis. (April 1, 1988). "Toni Morrison's Novel 'Beloved' Wins the Pulitzer Prize in Fiction". *The New York Times*. Archived copy
- *Angelo, Bonnie (May 22, 1987). "Toni Morrison : The Pain of Being Black". Time p. 4. ISSN 0040-781X Archived from the original on April 1, 2007.*
- *Demetrakopoulos, Stephanie A. (1992). "Maternal Bonds as Devourers of Women's Individuation in Toni Morrison's Beloved". African American Review. **26** (1). Indiana State University : 51–9. doi :10.2307/3042076. ISSN 1062-4783. JSTOR 3042076.*
- *Schapiro, Barbara (1991). "The Bonds of Love and the Boundaries of Self in Toni Morrison's "Beloved"". Contemporary Literature. **32** (2). University of Wisconsin Press : 194–210. doi :10.2307/1208361. ISSN 1548-9949. JSTOR 1208361.*
- Powell, Timothy; David Middleton (1997). "Toni Morrison : The Struggle to Depict the Black Figure on the White Page". *Toni Morrison's Fiction : Contemporary Criticism* : 45–59.
- "Toni Morrison Trilogy by Toni Morrison". goodreads.com. Retrieved April 29, 2017.

BLOCK IV
INTRODUCTION

The Fourth Block is African Literature, that stands as one of the most potent testimonies to the struggles and aspirations of postcolonial societies. This Block is divided into four units.

Unit-13 Emphasizes Africa's linguistic, cultural, and political diversity, presenting English as both a colonial inheritance and a tool of empowerment.

Unit-14 Discusses Chinua Achebe's *Things Fall Apart*, a seminal text that reclaims African history from colonial distortions and foregrounds indigenous values, cultural conflict, and the tragic consequences of colonial intrusion.

Unit-15 Discusses Dennis Brutus's poem "At a Funeral". In this poem the poet explores grief, political struggle, and collective loss. The poem connects personal mourning with larger suffering caused by apartheid.

Unit-16 Discusses Derek Walcott's poem "A Far Cry from Africa". The poem captures the anguish of hybrid identity, torn between African heritage and European education, reflecting the inner contradictions of postcolonial existence. In short, African literature, as represented in this block, not only critiques colonial violence but also celebrates resilience, cultural pride, and the ongoing quest for self-definition.

Unit-13 INTRODUCTION TO AFRICAN LITERATURE

Structure

13.0 Objectives

13.1 Introduction

13.2 Oral Literature : The Beginnings

13.3 Pre-colonial Written Literature : The Beginnings

13.4 The Influence of the Colonizers on the Indigenous Languages

13.5 The Development of African Novel in English

13.5.1 Beginnings of Novel in Nigeria

13.5.2 The Novelists of East, Central and South Africa Writing in English

13.6 Let Us Sum Up

13.7 Questions for self Assessment

13.8 Further Readings

13.0 OBJECTIVES

In this unit the pre-colonial African creative writing tradition in different regions has been briefly surveyed. The pre- colonial writings, their nature and types will be examined but the primary focus will be on development of novel as a significant genre of literature after the advent of colonizers in Africa. The factors leading to the development of novel will be enunciated and this study will help us to place Chinua Achebe's novel *Things Fall Apart* in a proper literary perspective and also help us in comparative study of this novel.

13.1 INTRODUCTION

The American-Welsh explorer, journalist, colonial administrator, journalist, author and politician Henry Morton Stanley (born **John Rowlands**; 28 January 1841 – 10 May 1904) popularized the term 'Dark Continent' employing it as a marketing tactic for popularizing his books on his African voyages. It also justified the European colonization of the vast African continent because they used this term to legitimize the enslavement of African people and exploitation of their land and resources. Darkness symbolized ignorance and mystery to the Europeans. This word with all the negative connotations wrapped up, became the defining characteristic of African continent for the Europeans. But Africa was not a land without civilization, history, culture, religion, social organization and customs. Quite contrary to what the Europeans believed or falsely propagated, Africa was the land inhabited by one of the oldest civilizations of the world with a rich tradition of literature, primarily in oral form.

Some critics believe that the reason for the existence of a rich oral tradition in Africa is attributed to the lack of a tradition of scripts or a writing system. According to them a large number of African languages lacked a systematic script and this led to the development of a rich tradition of oral literature in Africa. But this is only partially true. Actually the oral traditions were a conscious and highly developed form of communication and cultural transmission in African societies.

African countries have an incredibly rich oral tradition encompassing folktales, myths, proverbs, praise poetry, historical narratives and legends. These were passed down to generations

through storytelling and played a vital role in preserving and propagating cultural knowledge, social values, customs and traditions.

Modern African literature is a blend of styles and storytelling techniques borrowed from the oral literature tradition with those of documented tradition. The contemporary literature of Africa is complex and dynamic. In fact there is an ongoing interaction and adaptation that actually defines the modern African literature. Modern African literature originated in the educational system imposed by the colonial powers. Their models were drawn from the European traditions rather than African. But there is no denying the fact that the African oral traditions exerted their own influence on these literatures.

13.2 ORAL LITERATURE : THE BEGINNINGS

Pre-colonial African literature is primarily oral. The rich oral tradition which includes folktales, myths, legends, riddles, storytelling, proverbs, idioms, dance and epics etc. passed down from one generation to another, has great cultural significance. In some parts of Africa for example Ethiopia, written literature also existed still the majority of pre-colonial African literature was transmitted orally.

Ethiopian literary tradition dates back millennia and abounds with stories, poetry and folktales passed down through generations. The earliest known written works in Ethiopia can be traced back to 4th century AD under the influence of Ethiopian Orthodox Church. It started writing religious texts in *Ge'ez* language. The earliest written texts included *The Garima Gospels* one of the oldest surviving biblical texts written in *Ge'ez* around 500 AD and *The Kebra Negast*, a 14th-century text from Ethiopia, also known as the *Book of Kings*, narrating the history of the Ethiopian monarchy and its connection to the biblical King Solomon and Queen of Sheba.

Beyond any doubt oral literature constitutes the foundation of African literary tradition and it continued to thrive alongside written forms. This body of literature had a significant role to play in the society during occasions like birth, death and marriage etc. As most of the societies did not have a writing system or script, the onus of passing down the literature was on the professional singers or narrators.

In Western Africa the *griots* and *babalawos* were significant figures. *Griots* were storytellers, historians, poets and musicians. They were assigned the duty of preserving and transmitting history, genealogy and cultural traditions through music and oral storytelling. They were associated with royal courts acting as advisors, diplomats and praise singers. Their role was hereditary and they played instruments like kora (a 21 string harp) to accompany their narratives. *Babalawos* were the priests in the *Ifa* divination system. *Ifa* was a complex system of divination, ethics, and worldview in Yoruba community of South-Western Nigeria. *Babalawos* used *Ifa* to provide guidance, solve problems, and connect individuals with the spiritual realm. Their knowledge was vast encompassing the various aspects of Yoruba cosmology and tradition.

13.3 PRE-COLONIAL WRITTEN LITERATURE : THE BEGINNINGS

The beginning of written literature in North Africa goes back to Egyptian hieroglyphics, spread of Christianity and Islam. Christian missionaries came to Egypt in 1st Century and the tradition holds that Mark the Evangelist arrived around 49 AD. The Arabs conquered Egypt between 639and 642 AD. This led to the end of seven century long Roman period in Egypt and it was brought under the rule of Rashidun Caliphate. Egypt became a part of the Byzantine Empire.

The significant texts composed in ancient Egypt were in *Ge'ez* script which was also widely used in Horn of Africa also known as Somali Peninsula. It lies in East of Africa. The best known

work in this tradition is *The Kebra Negast*, a 14th-century text from Ethiopia, also known as the *Book of Kings*, narrating the history of the Ethiopian monarchy and its connection to the biblical King Solomon and Queen of Sheba. *The Garima's Gospels* created between 4th and 7th century was written in *Ge'ez* which was the ancient liturgical language of the Ethiopian Orthodox Church.

With the spread of Islam Maghrebi script derived from Arabic script was widely used in North Africa. A 13th century Qur'an from North Africa written in Maghrebi script is an example of the script's historical usage. The earlier written texts in North Africa included various scripts like Libyco-Berber (Tifinagh), Egyptian hieroglyphs, and Phoenician. Libyco-Berber is indigenous to North Africa and has been used for two thousand years in regions like Tunisia, Libya, Algeria, Morocco and Canary Islands. Hieroglyphics are among the oldest writing systems in the world and Phoenician script was particularly used in Carthage.

In Pre-colonial West Africa various writing systems or scripts were utilized including Nsibidi script, Bamum script and Ajami script. Some West African languages were also written using Latin or Arabic scripts. Ajami, an Arabic driven script is used for writing African languages like Songhai, Mandé, Hausa and Swahili etc. The scripts like Nsibidi were associated with secret societies. Nsibidi and Bamum are the indigenous scripts. Their use reveals a rich tradition of writing in West Africa.

Unlike other parts of Africa, Southern Africa did not have standardized and widespread systems of writing. They depended upon various forms of symbolic communication like rock art, bead work and other visual and material culture. These were not standardized means of communication. Oral tradition, performance and storytelling were the primary means of transmitting knowledge, history, and cultural information.

13.4 THE INFLUENCE OF THE COLONIZERS ON THE INDIGENOUS LANGUAGES

With the arrival of the Europeans, the literary activity in Africa gained momentum. European missionaries provided the much needed impetus for the systematization and propagation of writing systems by setting up printing press and undertaking the translation of Bible and other religious books. Their influence was most pronounced in Lesotho, Zimbabwe and South Africa. These regions are the part of Southern Africa. One of the official languages of Lesotho and South Africa is Sesotho. It is a Bantu language with origins tracing back to centuries. It evolved under the influence of various other African languages and was later influenced by the European missionaries particularly with the introduction of Latin alphabet and creation of a written form. One of its major writers is **Thomas Mfolo** (1876-1948) who is widely regarded as the father of Sesotho language. His third and most acclaimed novel *Chaka* was published in Sesotho language in 1925 and was later translated into English in 1931.

The first major writers in Sesotho language were **Segoete** and **Mangoela**. They drew heavily on the folk literature. They synthesized these elements with Christian moral ideas. This synthesis is most prominently visible in works of **Mfolo**. Other prominent writers in Sesotho language are ***Moroesi Akhionbare*** (1945-2020), **Caroline Ntsliseng Khaketla** (1918–2012) and **Sol T Plaatje** (1876-1932). **Sol T Plaatje** is another major writer whose books *Native Life in South Africa* and *Mhudi* are well acclaimed.

Xhosa is another significant Bantu language that was influenced by the European script. It is spoken by the *Xhosa* people primarily in South Africa and Zimbabwe. The Christian Missionaries **John Ross** and **John Bennie** established a printing press at Lovedale (now King William's Town, Eastern Cape, South Africa) and introduced written *Xhosa* in 1823. **Tiyo Soga** was a pioneer of *Xhosa* language. He was a *Xhosa* journalist, translator, minister and missionary evangelist, first

black South African to be ordained. He worked to translate Bible and John Bunyan's *The Pilgrim's Progress* into his native language *Xhosa*. The most significant *Xhosa* writer was **S.E.K Mqhayi** (1875-1945). He was a *Xhosa* poet, historian and translator who has been called the 'father of *Xhosa* poetry'. His first novel *U-Samson* published in 1907 is based on the biblical story of Samson. It was written in *Xhosa* language.

In 1905 Mqhayi was appointed to the *Xhosa* Bible Revision Board and he helped to codify *Xhosa* grammar and standardize *Xhosa* orthography. Other significant *Xhosa* writers include **W.W. Gqoba** (1840-1888), **J.T. Jabavu** (1859-1921), **J.J. R. Jolobe** (1902-1976) and **L. Kakaza** (1853-1915).

The two large ethnic groups of Zimbabwe- *Shona* and *Ndebele* have distinct cultures and languages. *Shona* people speak *Shona* language and they have a rich and diverse culture with well-known artistic traditions. The prominent literary persons in *Shona* language are **Solomon Mutswairo** (1924-2005), **Patrick Chakaipa** (1932-2003), and **Charles Mungoshi** (1947-2019), who are known for their novels, poetry, and plays in both *Shona* and English. Additionally, writers like **Ignatius Mabasa (1971)** and **Tsitsi Dangarembga (1959)** have also enriched the literary landscape with their works.

Zulu people who constitute the largest ethnic group in South Africa primarily reside in KwaZulu- Natal province. They are known for their rich cultural heritage. In the poems of poets like **B.W. Vilakazi** (1906-1947) writing in *Zulu*, anger and protest against the European settler's exploitation of the native Africans can be discerned. Other prominent writers in *Zulu* language are **Mazisi Kunene** (1930-2006) and **J.L. Dube** (1871-1946).

West Africa is a linguistically diverse region with hundreds of indigenous languages. Some of the most prominent languages of Western Africa include *Hausa, Yoruba, Igbo, Fula* and *Akan*. All these languages belong to Niger-Congo family except for *Hausa* which is Afro-Asiatic in origin. Along with *Yoruba*, *Hausa* and *Ibo* languages, *Twi, Ewe* and *Fanti* languages from Ghana also came under the influence of foreign missionaries around the middle of the 19th Century. Their significant contribution in West Africa was the development of literature in indigenous languages. The development of written literature in vernacular languages gained momentum with translation of the Bible into some of the important local languages.

In Ghana *Twi* and *Ga* were reduced into writing by the Presbyterians. The grammar of *Ga* language was written by Rev. Johannes Zimmermann in 1858. In 1874 Rev. J.G. Christaller produced *Twi* grammar and a dictionary. The Evangelical Presbyterian missionaries were the First to develop literature in *Ewe*. One of the lasting works of C.M.S. missionaries in Africa was the development of literature in *Yoruba*. In 1859 the first newspaper in *Yoruba* called *Iwe-Irohim* was published by the missionaries. **Isaac Babalola Thomas** (1888-1963) was a pioneering Nigerian author. He wrote what is now considered as one of Nigeria's earliest novels *Itan Igbesi Aiye Emi Segilola* (*The Life Story of Me, Segilola, of the Fascinating Eyes – the One Who Had a Thousand Lovers in her Life*).

Today it is *hailed as the first Yoruba novel* in a major African literary tradition. This novel was written as a series of letters to a local newspaper causing a sensation in Lagos in the late 1920s. The narrative and the commentary that sprang up around this novel in the *Yoruba* press offer a unique view of life in colonial Lagos. Another significant writer Chief **Daniel Olorunfẹmi Fágúnwà** (1903-1963) was a Nigerian author of *Yoruba* heritage who pioneered the *Yorùbá* language novel.

Fágúnwà's novels are deeply rooted in the African folktale traditions and idioms including supernatural elements. In his novels he explores the divide between the Christian beliefs of Africa's

colonizers and the continent's traditional religion. His heroes are usually **Yorùbá** hunters, who interact with kings, sages, and even gods in their quests. He remains the most widely read **Yorùbá**-language author, and a major influence on such contemporary writers as **Amos Tutuola** (1920-1997). Fágúnwà's prominent books include *The Brave Hunter in the Forest of the Four Hundred Gods* and *The Forests of Oldumareo*. Other well-known **Yorùbá** writers are **Isaac Delano** (1904-1979) and **Adeboye Babalola** (1926-2008).

Hausa is a Chadic language spoken by millions of people across West Africa primarily in Northern Nigeria and Southern Niger. It belongs to the Chadic branch of the Afro-Asiatic language family. **Hausa** has a rich history, with both a Latin-based script (**Boko**) and an Arabic-derived script (**Ajami**). **Boko** is the official script of Hausa used in education and media. **Ajami** is traditionally used for literally and religious purposes and has historical significance.

Hausa literature comprises of both oral and written works. Its rich history is rooted in both traditional storytelling and Islamic scholarship. It is deeply connected to its oral tradition with fables, myths and various forms of poetry that are passed down through generations. Several writers have contributed to Hausa literature. Some notable figures are **Abubakar Imam** (1911-1981) known for his novel trilogy *Magana Jari Ce* and for his role in promoting Hausa literature, **Abubakar Tafawa Balewa** (1912-1966) author of *Shehu Umar* and first and only Prime Minister of Nigeria and **Balaraba Ramat Yakubu** (1959), leader in the *littattafan soyayya* (love literature) genre. She is one of the most outspoken advocates of women's rights.

Ibo is a language spoken by the Igbo people of South-Eastern Nigeria. There are approximately 31 million speakers of *Ibo*. This language is a part of the Niger-Congo language family and has diverse dialects some of which are not mutually intelligible. The large number of dialects has historically hindered the development of a standardized form of the language, both spoken and written. Standard *Ibo* is a relatively recent development, based on the *Owerri* and *Umuahia* dialects.

Several writers by writing in *Ibo* have contributed to the development of *Ibo* literature and language.

Pita Nwana (1881-1968) was a Nigerian novelist and carpenter. He is regarded as the writer of the first Ibo novel *Omenuko* (1935). This novel is regarded as the bedrock for fictions in *Igbo* literature. Some critics consider Nwana as the father of *Ibo* literature. He is critically acclaimed as a pioneer craftsman, the ingenious pace setter who stimulated the course of literary creativity in *Ibo* language. In this novel conflicting loyalties and psychology of crime have been examined and hence it is more than a quest story. It resembles Bunyan's *Pilgrim's Progress* in many respects.

Leopold Bell-Gam was a notable *Igbo* writer who authored the *Igbo* language novel, *Ije Odumodu Jere (Odumodu's Travels*), which was published in 1963. He was also an educationist who served as a headmaster in various towns. Leopold Bell-Gam's *Ije Odumodu Jere* is considered the second major *Igbo* fiction novel, following *Omenuko*. The book tells the story of Igwegbe Odum, an *Igbo* businessman and politician who migrated to Arondizuogu. Bell-Gam's work played a significant role in the development of *Igbo* literature and language. His father, Senebo Sofiri Leopold Bell-Gam, was also an educationist.

- **D.N. Achara** is recognized as one of the pioneers of Igbo prose fiction, alongside
- writers like **Pita Nwana** and **L.B. Gam**. He is known for his novel *Ala Bingo* in
- the Ibo language**.** This novel, published in 1937, is an allegory, meaning it uses
- symbolic characters and events to represent deeper truths or ideas. **Achara's**
- work, along with others, helped to establish the foundation for Ibo literature in

- written form, drawing inspiration from the rich oral tradition of the Ibo people.

Eastern Africa is the region with a high linguistic diversity. Swahili is the most widely spoken language, functioning as a lingua franca across the region. Several other languages are also prominent, including those from the Afro-asiatic, Niger-Congo (Bantu), and Nilotic families. Swahili is a Bantu language widely spoken in Tanzania, Kenya, Uganda and the parts of the Democratic Republic of Congo. It is also an official language of the East African Community. English, French and Italian languages are also present due to historical and educational influences. The linguistic diversity of the region is a reflection of its rich cultural heritage.

Swahili literature has deep roots in oral traditions, including poetry, songs, proverbs, folktales, and riddles. *Swahili* literature is also known as *fasihi ya Kiswahili*. It encompasses both oral and written works in the *Swahili* language. It includes novels (*riwaya*), poetry (*ushairi*), and drama (*tamthilia*). Initially, *Swahili* literature was heavily influenced by Arabic and later by European colonial powers. Actually *Swahili* language developed as a result of trade contacts between the Arabs and the coastal people of east Africa. Today, it's produced primarily in Tanzania and Kenya, with distinct differences emerging due to varying language policies. Arabic, Islamic, and European influences are evident in *Swahili* literature.

Early *Swahili* poetry exhibits strong influence and elements of Islam. Its most prominent writers are **Muyaka Bin Haji** (1776–1840). He was *a Swahili poet from Mombasa* who became famous for his original phrases and using the *mashairi* verse form. *Mashairi* are verses in *Swahili* language that are recited or sung on the public occasions same as the tradition of *mushaira* in Urdu language. **Mwana Kupona binti Msham** (1810-1865), born on Pate Island, was one of the most eminent female *Swahili* poet of the 19th century and author of a poem called *Utendi wa Mwana Kupona* or *The Book of Mwana Kupona*. It is the most highly regarded work of literature in *Swahili* language.

In *Kamba* language of East Africa the writer **John Samuel Mbiti** (1931-2019) is widely recognized as a foundational figure in the field of African theology and thought. He is particularly known for his work on African traditional religions and his concept of "African time," which challenged Western linear views of time. He is often called the father of modern African theology. He is closely associated with *Kamba* language which is a Bantu language spoken by the *Kamba* people, primarily in Kenya, as well as by smaller communities in Uganda and Tanzania. **Mbiti** belonged to Kenya. He was the first African scholar to translate the New Testament from Greek into his native *Kamba* language. He also wrote several books and articles in *Kamba* and used his work to explore African traditional religions and theology.

John Mbiti's novel, *Mutunga na Ngewa Yake* (*Mutunga and his Story*) published in 1954, is a *Kamba* language book that follows the journey of a young boy named Mutunga from a village in Kitui County to Mombasa and eventually to India. The story, which was a set book in Kenyan primary schools, explores themes of travel, cultural encounters, and personal growth. **Mbiti** later wrote a sequel, *Wetele Ndakusaa* (*Those Who Wait Do Not Die*), which continues Mutunga's story, taking him to Uganda during Idi Amin's rule.

Runyoro, also known as *Nyoro* or *Orunyoro*, is a Bantu language primarily spoken by the *Nyoro* people in Western Uganda. *Runyoro* belongs to the Bantu language family, which is part of the larger Niger-Congo language family. It is spoken in the western part of Uganda, particularly in the districts of Hoima, Masindi, Kiryandongo, Kibaale, and Buliisa, as well as parts of Kiboga, Kyankwanzi, Kyegegwa, and Kyenjojo. Several authors write in the *Runyoro-Rutooro* language, including **Evangeline Barongo (**died in 2023 aged 80 years**)**, who is known for her children's

literature. She writes wonderful books especially for children. She also helps many groups that encourage kids to read and write.

Evangeline was a founding member of the Uganda Children's Writers and Illustrators Association (UCWIA). This group brings together people who write and draw for children's books. It also includes librarians, teachers, and booksellers. She was also a part of the International Board on Books for Young People (IBBY) in Uganda, which started in 2004. Since 1997, she has been on the board of the National Book Trust of Uganda. She wrote in both English and *Runyoro* languages. Her stories were rooted in oral tradition but with a twist to suit the children.

13.5 THE DEVELOPMENT OF AFRICAN NOVEL IN ENGLISH

It is apparent from the earlier sections that Novel as a literary genre was not indigenous to African literature. Primitive African literature was oral in nature and the three genres- poems, plays and stories were pervasive. The reason was that oral traditions relied on collective participation, improvisation, and shorter narratives suitable for social gatherings and the above mentioned three genres were easier to memorize and hence suited the oral form of literature. The novel, as a literary form, didn't exist in traditional African oral literature primarily because of its inherent individualistic nature and length, which clashed with the communal and performance-based aspects of oral storytelling.

Novels are lengthy works, requiring sustained attention and reading time, which contrasts with the shorter, more episodic nature of oral narratives intended for a single session. Oral stories often adapt to the context and time available, making them suitable for various social occasions. Novels are typically individual creations, reflecting the author's unique perspective and experiences, and are consumed individually within the four walls of the room. In contrast, African oral traditions are deeply rooted in community, with stories shared and adapted collectively, often involving audience participation and interaction.

With the arrival of the European colonizers the primitive African way of life was jeopardized. The African traditions were denounced as primitive and savage by the colonizers and all the aspects of African society including socio-economic as well as cultural lives were completely disrupted. With the introduction of the European education system, urbanization, shift to a market oriented economy and emphasis on literacy a new genre of literature namely novel emerged on the literary scene of Africa. It was a genre which was earlier alien to the African literature.

As delineated in the earlier sections, one can observe that numerous attempts were made in the direction of creating written literature. These efforts were actually the attempts that eventually culminated in the writing of novels. One of the earliest forms of written African prose available in the West was slave narratives, such as **Olaudah Equiano's** *The Interesting Narrative of the Life of Olaudah Equiano* (1789). This period also saw Africans exposed to Western languages and literature, leading to the emergence of writing in those languages.

The arrival of missionaries in West Africa led to the translation of religious texts and the establishment of language schools, which indirectly facilitated the development of written literature in both European and indigenous languages. The spread of English language and education in West Africa, particularly in the Gold Coast (present-day Ghana), played a significant role in the emergence of the novel in English. Unlike the fiction in African language which originated in South Africa, the emergence of African literature in English is associated with Western Africa.

The earliest African novels written in English include *Ethiopia Unbound* by **J. E. Casely Hayford** (also known as **Ekra-Agiman**) published in 1911, and *Mhudi* by **Sol Plaatje**, considered by some to be the first Anglophone novel by an African. These works, along with others like

Thomas Mofolo's *Chaka* (1923), are foundational to the development of African literature in English.

J.E. Casely Hayford (29 September 1866 – 11 August 1930) was a prominent Fante Gold Coast journalist, editor, author, lawyer, educator, and politician who supported pan-African nationalism. His 1911 novel *Ethiopia Unbound* is one of the earliest novels published in English by an African. Ethiopia Unbound is an amalgam of documentation and fantasy. It was first published by C. M. Philips in London. It has been described as "one of the most important contributions to the literature on African nationalism", which made a plea for a unified African nation. Set in both Africa and England, *Ethiopia Unbound* relies on philosophical debates between an African and his English friend, as well as references to contemporary African events and ancient African history, to provide a context for its exploration of African identity and the struggle for emancipation.

Solomon Tshekisho Plaatje (9 October 1876 – 19 June 1932) was a South African intellectual, journalist, linguist, politician, translator and writer. His novel *Mhudi : An Epic of South African Native Life a Hundred Years Ago* is a South African novel by Sol Plaatje, first published in 1930. The novel has been republished many times. The novel is a political historical novel which explores the development of the Traansval kingdom. The novel redefines the standard Eurocentric narrative of history, which supported Apartheid and its racist infrastructure.

Thomas Mokopu Mofolo (22 December 1876 – 8 September 1948) is often regarded as the first African novelist. His body of work, which consists of three books composed between 1905 and 1910, were first written in *Sesotho*, and then widely translated. He is best known for his third book, *Chaka* (1925), a fictional retelling of the story of the rise and fall of the Zulu emperor-king Shaka.

Richard Emmanuel Obeng (1877 – 1951) was a Ghanaian Basel Catechist and teacher. He is credited for writing one of Africa's earliest and Ghana's first novel titled *Eighteenpence*. The novel was published in 1942. It is a seminal work that criticizes colonial administration of justice. This novel is considered as an extended allegory eulogizing the virtues of a large family, honesty and rural life. It exhibits the influence of **Bible** like **Casely Hayford's** *Ethiopia Unbound* in terms of language, style and moral message but unlike **Hayford's** book **Obeng's** *Eighteenpence* shows signs of humour also.

13.5.1 Beginnings of Novel in Nigeria

Amos Tutuola (1920-1997) was a Nigerian author who wrote mainly fantasy novels. According to African Book Portals, **Tutuola** was the first African, whose works were published in English outside of Africa. He is best known for the novel, *The Palm-Wine Drinkard and His Dead Palm-Wine Tapster in the Deads' Town* (1952), which was the first Nigerian book to achieve international fame. In *The Palm-Wine Drunkard* and his subsequent novels, **Tutuola** incorporated Yoruba myths and legends into loosely constructed prose epics that improvise on traditional themes found in Yoruba folktales.

The Palm-Wine Drinkard is a classic quest tale in which the hero, a lazy boy who likes to spend his days drinking palm wine, gains wisdom, confronts death, and overcomes many perils in the course of his journey. This novel is considered as the first major attempt by a Nigerian to write in English. The novel is composed in largely ungrammatical English which also contributed to its instant success. The critics saw this as the birth of a new variety of English and Tutuola repeated this success many times to prove that there was more to his writings than just 'wrong English'. The use of Yoruba folk material and transformation of their myths into modern versions are the unique features of Tutuola's writings.

Other prominent Nigerian novelists include Cyprian Ekwenski, T M Aluko, Gabriel Okara, Wole Soyinka, Flora Nwapa, Ben Okri, Buchi Emcheta and Chinua Achebe**.** Achebe's work will be discussed in subsequent unit.

13.5.2 The Novelists of East, Central and South Africa Writing in English

Eastern, Central, and South African novelists were explicitly rebels but not in the military sense. Actually many of them were deeply involved in political and social activism, challenging established power structures and injustices through their writing. Their works often tackled themes of colonialism, apartheid, and other forms of oppression, making them powerful voices for change and resistance. Several prominent novelists from the region used their writing as a form of resistance against oppressive regimes and social injustices.

Ngũgĩ wa Thiong'o (5 January 1938 – 28 May 2025) was a Kenyan writer imprisoned for his political views, **Ngũgĩ** used his writing to critique neocolonialism and promote African languages and culture. His novel *Devil on the Cross* (1980) was written on toilet paper while he was in prison. His other prominent works are *Petals of Blood* (1977), *A Grain of Wheat* (1967), *Weep Not, Child* (1964), *and Wizard of the Crow* (2006). He is also recognized for his non-fiction works like *Decolonising the Mind,* which discusses the importance of language in African literature. **Ngũgĩ wa Thiong'o's** famous works explore themes of colonialism, its legacy, identity, and social justice. His novels, plays, and essays critique the impact of colonialism and neo-colonialism on African societies, focusing on the experiences of Kenyans navigating cultural and political shifts during and after British rule.

Chinua Achebe's (1930-2013) works like *Things Fall Apart* (1958) explored the impact of colonialism on African societies and challenged Western narratives about Africa. **Achebe's** central themes revolve around the impact of colonialism on African societies, particularly the *Igbo* culture in Nigeria. His works explore the clash between traditional African values and the imposed European colonial structures, highlighting the destructive consequences of cultural imperialism. His other significant works are *No Longer at Ease* (1960), *Arrow of God* (1964), *Anthills of the Savannah* (1987) and *A Man of the People* (1966).

Grace Ogot (15 May 1930 – 18 March 2015) was a prominent East African novelist who significantly contributed to the development of the novel in the region, alongside **Ngũgĩ wa Thiong'o**. Other notable East African novelists include **Abdulrazak Gurnah** (b. 20 Decmber 1948), a Tanzanian-British author who won the Nobel Prize in Literature in 2021, and **Nuruddin Farah** (b. 24 November 1945), a Somali novelist celebrated for his work spanning multiple genres. His first novel, *From a Crooked Rib*, was published in 1970 and has been described as one of the cornerstones of modern East African literature today.

Other East African novelists who contributed immensely to the development of African novel are **Peter K. Palangyo (Tanzania), Okello Oculi (Uganda), David Maillu (Kenya)** and **Meja Mwangi (Kenya)**. East African novelists have focused on the challenges of defining identity in the post-colonial era, navigating the legacy of colonialism and grappling with the complexities of globalization. Their novels often feature characters caught between traditional African values and the influence of Western culture, highlighting the tensions and transformations within East African societies.

The Central African novelists include **Legson Kayira** (1942-2012) whose novels *The Looming Shadow* (1967) and *Jingala* (1969) have the common themes of facing and overcoming a significant threat that endangers a community or the world and the clash of two cultures particularly tradition of Africa and the modernity of Europe. Several prominent Central African novelists writing

in English, include **Pierre Makombo Bamboté, Etienne Goyémidé, Blaise N'Djehoya, Cyriaque Robert Yavoucko**, and **Adrienne Yabouza**.

Nadine Gordimer (20 November 1923 – 13 July 2014) was a South African writer who received the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1991. Gordimer consistently challenged apartheid through her fiction and activism. She refused to let her work be aired by the South African Broadcasting Corporation because it was controlled by the apartheid government. *Burger's Daughter* (1979), *July's People* (1981), *The House Gun* (1998) and *The Pickup* (2002) are the prominent novels written by her. Her works frequently explore the social and political landscape of apartheid South Africa, focusing on themes of race, class, gender, and the human condition under oppression. Her works delve into the complexities of individual identity, moral choices, and the impact of societal structures on personal lives. Her other significant works are ***The Conservationist*** **(1974), the novel for which she won the Booker Prize,** *A Sport of Nature (1987),* ***My Son's Story*** **(1990) and** ***A World of Strangers*** **(1958).**

Other South African novelists like Alex La Guma, Peter Abrahams, Alan Paton and Ezekiel Mphalele have also made significant contribution to this literary form. Alex La Guma (20 February 1924 – 11 October 1985) was a black novelist of South Africa in the 1960s whose characteristically brief works *A Walk in the Night* (1962), *The Stone-Country* (1965), and *In the Fog of the Season's End* (1972) gained power through his superb eye for detail, allowing the humour, pathos, or horror of a situation to speak for itself.

La Guma was reared in a family active in the black liberation movement. In 1960 he joined the staff of the progressive newspaper *New Age.* During the next few years he was detained and imprisoned several times for his antiapartheid activities. His themes basically centered around the problems of coloured people in a society facing tripartite division into whites, blacks and people of Asian origin. Due to egregious segregation policy of the government and severe repression of the people in general and writers in particular a number of South African writers were forced to leave the country and go into exile. **La Guma** and **Bessie Head** are the most notable examples. The early writings of these novelists were quite naturally full of the themes of protest against racial discrimination.

Dominic Mulaisho (15 August 1933- 1 July 2013) is another novelist whose novels like *The Tongue of the Dumb* (1971) depict the power struggle in African village. He was from Zambia His second novel was *The Smoke That Thunders* (1979).

In Western Africa novels were primarily centered round the family or the clan firstly because there were no white settlers to ruin and wreck their traditional social set up and also because there was a strong desire to represent and celebrate African cultures and traditions in them, which often centered round kinship and community, before, during, and after the colonial period.

Critics have attempted to divide the African novels into five types on the basis of their themes. There is no clear cut division and there are overlaps. The classification given below is in the chronological order in which African fiction is considered to have evolved over the years. They are-

1. The Anthropological or Sociological novels like **Achebe's** *Things Fall Apart* and **Ngugi's** *The River Between* fall in the first category. These novels not only describe in detail the social and cultural aspects of people's lives like their customs, kinship and rituals etc. but they also depict the initial exposure of African society to the Western culture and education system along with the clash with Christianity.
2. In the second category we have the novels dealing with the problem related to the adoption of Western system of education. These narratives often highlight the clash between traditional African values and modern, Western-influenced educational models, as well as its impact on individuals and communities. *Weep Not Child* by Ngugi wa Thiong'o and *Ambiguous Adventure* (1961) by Cheikh Hamidou Kane (1928) fall under this category.

3. In the third category we have novels that portray problems related to process of urbanization or the development of a city culture. Several African novels in English explore the complexities of urban life, including issues of organization and the development of city culture. These novels often depict the impact of colonialism, post-colonial challenges, and rapid urbanization on African cities and their inhabitants. Key themes of these novels include social inequality, the clash between tradition and modernity, and the search for identity in a rapidly changing urban environment. *Jagua Nana* (1961) by Cyprian Ekwensi, Chinua Achebe's *A Man of the People* (1966), Ngũgĩ wa Thiong'o's *Petals of Blood (1977*), Meja Mwangi's *Going Down River Road* (1976*)*are significant examples of novels of this type.

4. In the fourth category are the novels that deal with the problems of politics in a more pronounced manner. The examples that fall in this category are Peter Abraham's *Wreath for Udomo* (1956), Ngugi's *Devil on the Cross* and Achebe's *A Man of the People*. Abraham's novel explores the themes of colonialism, revolution, and leadership through the story of Michael Udomo, a fictional African leader fighting for independence. The novel delves into the complexities of these themes by examining the personal and political sacrifices made during the struggle for liberation, the corrupting influence of power, and the tensions between tradition and modernity.

5. The last category consists of the novels dealing with more individual life styles. **Ayi Kwei Armah's** (b. 28 October 1939) novel *Fragments* (1970) and **Mphahlele's** novel *The Wanderers* (1971) fall in this category. **Armah's** novel *Fragments* shares thematic similarities with several other novels, particularly those exploring post-colonial disillusionment and the clash between tradition and modernity in Africa. Novels like *The Beautyful Ones Are Not Yet Born* (1968), *Why Are We So Blest?* (1972), *and The Healers* (1978), all by **Armah**, delve into similar themes of corruption, alienation, and the search for identity in a rapidly changing African landscape. *The Wanderers* explores themes of exile, identity, and the complexities of African experiences, particularly the impact of apartheid on individuals and society. It also delves into the search for meaning and purpose, both on a personal and political level.

13.6 LET US SUM UP

The ancient African literature was primarily oral in form and quite contrary to the popular perception created by the colonizers in the minds of the people, Africa possessed a rich cultural heritage and was the seat of one of most ancient civilization of the world. Novel was not an ancient Africa genre. Poetry, drama and stories were the genres that suited oral transmission of literature much better as compared to novel. Novel developed under the colonial influence. Urbanization, market economy and colonial education system were responsible for the rise of novel as a popular genre in Africa. Majority of written literature in Africa came into existence after the colonial invasion. With the introduction of European education system and the religion of the colonizers-Christianity the influence of Bible on the writings of African writers became more and more discernable.

The earliest attempts at writing novels were made in Western parts of Africa specifically Ghana and Nigeria. South African writers were late in embarking upon this journey because of the restrictions imposed on the natives by the government on the access to European languages.

13.7 QUESTIONS

On the basis of your reading of the various sections of this unit, answer the questions that follow :

1) Before the arrival of the European Colonizers what was the most prevalent form of literature and why?

2) Enlist the factors that attributed to the development of written literature in different parts of Africa.

3) Why was novel not a popular genre of literature in Africa in early times?

4) Enlist the factors that were responsible for the development of novel writing in Africa.

5) Name the early novelists of Africa who provided the impetus to this relatively new genre of literature.

6) African novel developed under the Colonial influence still retaining the flavor of ancient African story narration technique. Comment and justify.

13.8 FURTHER READINGS

1. https ://www.britannica.com/art/African-literature
2. https ://egyankosh.ac.in/bitstream/123456789/27007/1/Unit-16.pdf
3. https ://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/African_literature
4. https ://exploringafrica.matrix.msu.edu/module-eleven-background/
5. https ://study.com/academy/lesson/african-literature-history- characteristics.html

UNIT-14 CHINUA ACHEBE'S *THINGS FALL APART*

Structure

14.0 Objective

14.1 Introduction

14.2 Life and Works of Chinua Achebe

14.3 *Things fall Apart*- Characters

14.4 *Things fall Apart*- Summary

14.5 Themes

14.6 Specific features of *Things fall Apart*

14.7 Let Us Sum Up

14.8 Questions

14.9 Further Readings

14.0 OBJECTIVES

The primary objective of this unit is to introduce you to the works of Chinua Achebe and discuss and analyze in detail his masterpiece *Things Fall Apart*. This analysis will supplement your reading of the novel and should not be taken as a substitute for it. An attempt has been made in this module to provide a comprehensive review of the major themes and specific features of the novel. These features will help you in systematically evaluating the novel.

14.1 INTRODUCTION

Things Fall Apart is the most celebrated novel of the Nigerian writer Chinua Achebe. It was his debut novel and was published in 1958. It received instant acclaim in British Nation Press. It is a novel which brings to its reader the rich world of Umoufia, life of its tragic protagonist Okonkwo with captivating visuals and yet a simple narrative style. It captures the decline of the traditional Igbo society and culture with the advent of colonial power and under the influence of Christianity. This novel is considered as one of the greatest African literary achievements. It is the most wide us read novel and the endurance of its popularity is the testimony to its significance as the part of human heritage. It is the first novel of the African trilogy of Achebe. The other two being *No longer at Ease* and *The Arrow of God* but *Things Fall Apart* remains a class apart.

14.2 LIFE AND WORKS OF CHINUA ACHEBE

Albert Chinualumogu Achebe or Chinua Achebe (16 November 1930- 21 March 2013) was a well-known and highly acclaimed African novelist. He was born and brought up at Igbo (Ibo) town of Ogidi, Colonial Nigeria. This accounts for the influence of Igbo traditional culture on his personality. He was a bright student at the school who excelled at academics and attended the University College (now University of Ibadan). His parents were early converts to Christianity and got him baptized. He was raised as a Christian but later on changed his name to an African name. His strong disapproval of the imposition of Western traditions and values by the colonial powers over the traditional African societies and the predicament of the new educated Africa trying to balance and forge its own identity constitute the major themes of his novels.

At the University College, while pursuing graduate degree in humanities, Achebe came in close contact with the European thoughts, traditions, values and culture. At the same time he also developed interest in the history of Nigeria. He gradually discerned that with the imposition of the colonial rule over Africa, the culture of the natives was immensely threatened. He pondered upon the questions about the pre-colonial African society in order to fill in the gaps in his readings. He rightly perceived that the Europeans on the pretext of civilizing and educating the Africans eventually ended up with the destruction of their native culture and he blamed the West for the oppression and gradual breakdown of original or primeval ways of life of the Africans. He vividly captured the psychological and social disorientation resulting from the compulsive imposition of the Western culture upon traditional African society in his most celebrated novel *Things Fall Apart* (1958). This novel was published in 1958 and is still considered as his magnum opus. It was not only his first novel but also the one that firmly established his reputation as the most eminent and highly acclaimed African novelist.

Things Fall Apart is Achebe's highly read, translated and studied novel. This novel provides the readers a deep insight into the struggle of the colonized Igbo society to resist the invasion of the white missionaries on their land. This invasion threatened the indigenous culture including their religion, family structures, gender roles, relations and even trade. He was deeply critical of the way Africa was portrayed by the European writers.

After completion of his graduation Achebe moved to Lagos where he worked for the Nigerian Broadcasting Service. He worked as the Director of the External Broadcasting from 1961 to 1967. In 1967, Chinua Achebe and the poet Christopher Okigbo co-founded a publishing company in Enugu. Okigbo tragically died shortly after in the Nigerian Civil War while fighting for Biafran independence, a cause Achebe openly supported. In 1969, Achebe toured the United States alongside fellow writers Gabriel Okara and Cyprian Ekwensi, delivering lectures at various universities. Upon returning to Nigeria, he was appointed a research fellow at the University of Nigeria and later became a professor of English. He held that role from 1976 to 1981. He was appointed as the Professor Emeritus in 1985. He also served as the director of two Nigerian publishing houses, Heinemann Educational Books Ltd. and Nwankwo-Ifejika Ltd., starting in 1970. After a car accident in 1990 that left him partially paralyzed, Achebe relocated to the United States, where he taught at Bard College in Annandale-on-Hudson, New York. In 2009, he left Bard to join the faculty at Brown University in Providence, Rhode Island.

Things Fall Apart was Achebe's first novel that firmly established his reputation as the eminent African novelist. He occupies a unique position in the domain of English Literature on account of championing the cause of the marginalized and the under privileged. Achebe's African trilogy opens with *Things Fall Apart* (1958) followed by *No Longer at Ease* (1960) and *Arrow of God* (1964). The protagonist of the novel *No Longer at Ease* is an Igbo man Obi Okonkwo. He is the grandson of Okonkwo who in turn is the protagonist of the novel *Things Fall Apart.* Obi leaves his village and pursues higher education at a university in London. He returns to Nigeria and joins the Nigerian Colonial Civil Services. He is accused of accepting bribe and a trial is initiated to investigate the charges. This novel portrays the theme of corruption. Obi starts as an idealistic man but soon becomes entrenched in corruption in an effort to balance the demands of his family and village for monetary support while simultaneously keeping up with the materialism of Western culture. This novel depicts the family continuity between Ogbuefi Okonkwo in *Things Fall Apart* and his grandson Obi Okonkwo in *No Longer at Ease.*

The protagonist of the third novel *Arrow of God* is Ezeulu who is the main priest of the six villages of Umuaro in Colonial Nigeria. He worships the God Ulu and the Igbo people of these villages worship him. With the arrival of the Christian Missionaries in the villages, the traditional

village setup and their culture receive a major jolt. Ezeulu tries his best to convince his people to stay true to their traditional values and believes but the people ultimately surrender to the new religion. Infuriated and disheartened Ezeulu turns his resentment towards his own people. His overwhelming self- pride, which is in conflict with the humiliation inflicted by his own people, ultimately turns him into an arrow in the bow of his God Ulu. With the command of God he alienates himself from his community which ultimately leads to his downfall.

Chinua Achebe published several other works also. His novels *A Man of the People* (1966) and *Anthills of the Savannah* (1987) explore the themes of Post- Colonial African politics and corruption. His books of essays include *Morning Yet on Creation Day* (1975), *Hopes and Impediments* (1988), *Home and Exile* (2000), *The Education of a British-Protected Child* (2009). *There Was a Country : A Personal History of Biafra* (2012) is an autobiographical work by Achebe. It is a memoir in which he has chronicled the Nigerian Civil War, also known as the Biafran War. Achebe also won the Man Booker International Prize in 2007. He died after a brief illness in 2013 at the age of 82 years.

14.3 THINGS FALL APART-CHARACTERS

Here follows a brief introduction to the characters of the novel *Things Fall Apart*.

1. **Okonkwo** is novel's main character and an influential clan leader, Okonkwo fears becoming an unsuccessful, weak man like his father, Unoka. As a result, Okonkwo is hardworking and aggressive. These traits bring him fame
2. **Nwoye** is Okonkwo's eldest son. Nwoye resembles his grandfather Unoka, in that he's drawn to gentleness and music, even though he recognizes that his father disapproves it.
3. **Ikemefuna** is the ill-fated boy. He is the Mbaino sacrifice to Umuofia in order to prevent war. Ikemefuna is unaware that his father had a hand in killing one of the daughters of Umuofia and he
4. **Ezeudo** is oldest man in the village and a great orator. He warns Okonkwo not to take part in the killing of Ikemefuna, but Okonkwo pays no heed. Ezeudo passes away shortly afterwards.
5. **Ekwefi** is Okonkwo's second wife and the mother of Ezinma. Once the village beauty, Ekwefi ran away from her first husband to live with Okonkwo. Ezinma is her only surviving child
6. **Ezinma** is Okonkwo's eldest daughter and Ekwefi's only child to survive past infancy. Ezinma resembles her mother who was once the village beauty. She understands her father well.
7. **Mr. Brown** is the first white missionary to travel to Umuofia. He institutes a policy of respect and compromise between the church and the clansmen.
8. **Reverend Smith** replaces Mr. Brown after the latter departs for health reasons. Unlike Mr. Brown, Reverend Smith is impatient and strict, showing no respect for indigenous customs or culture.
9. **The District Commissioner** shows up in Umuofia after Okonkwo murders a white man towards the end of the novel. The District Commissioner plans to write a book on his experiences in Nigeria.
10. **Unoka** is Okonkwo's father. Though a talented musician in life, he was also lazy and irresponsible, accumulating many debts. Unoka dies a shameful death, still in debt and

without title. His death haunts Okonkwo, who vows to hate everything that his father loved, including gentleness and idleness.

11. **Obierika** is Okonkwo's close friend. He questions clan tradition at times, choosing not to take part in the killing of Ikemefuna, for example, and wondering why Okonkwo's accidental crime should merit exile for seven years. He helps Okonkwo by selling his yams and visiting him in exile. He often represents the voice of reason. He is the father of Maduka (son) and Ekueke (daughter).
12. **Akunna**, a respected man of the clan, discusses religious beliefs with Mr. Brown. During these discussions, Akunna brings up some striking similarities between their methods of worship.
13. **Uchendu** is the younger brother of Okonkwo's mother. Uchendu attempts to reassure Okonkwo after he arrives with his family in Mbanta, advising him to be grateful for the comfort his motherland offers.
14. **Enoch** is a fanatical convert to the Christian church in Umuofia. While Mr. Brown disapproves of Enoch's blatant disrespect for Igbo traditions, Reverend Smith encourages Enoch's provocative behavior.
15. **Chielo** is a widow who also serves as a priestess in Umuofia. She is dedicated to the Oracle of the goddess Agbala. Chielo is friends with Ekwefi and cares for Ezinma, whom she calls "my daughter."
16. **Nwakibie**, a wealthy clansman, lends Okonkwo 800 seed-yams when Okonkwo is still young, helping him to build the beginnings of his personal wealth and status. However, the year that Nwakibie lends Okonkwo the seed-yams turns out to be the worst year for harvest in living memory.
17. **Ojiubo-** Okonkwo's third wife; the mother of several of Okonkwo's children.
18. **Agbala** (*Ahg*-bah-lah) The Oracle of the Hills and the Caves, who influences all aspects of Umuofian life. She is based on the real Oracle at Awka, who controlled Igbo life for centuries.
19. **Mr. Kiaga** (Kee-*ah*-gah)- The native interpreter for the missionaries. He is a teacher and a leader of the new church in Mbanta.
20. **Amalinze the Cat**- The wrestler who was undefeated for seven years. He was defeated by Okonkwo. This brought Okonkwo great respect.
21. **Anasi**- Nwakibie's first wife.
22. **Aneto**- He is an Igbo man who is hanged for committing murder.
23. **Ezeani**- Ezeani is the priest of Ani, the earth goddess. He chastises Okonkwo for beating his wife, Oijugo during the week of peace.
24. **Ezeugo-** He is an Igbo leader and powerful orator.
25. **Kotma**- A Court messenger who works for the office of the District Commissioner.
26. **Maduka**- He is Obierika's son who wins a wrestling match.
27. **Uchendu-** He is Okonkwo's uncle who welcomes Okonkwo to his motherland during Okonkwo's exile. He provides land and seeds for Okonkwo to farm and uses his wisdom to help Okonkwo overcome his depression. He is patient, noble and wise. Uchendu acts as a foil to Okonkwo, who is quick to anger and values traditional masculinity.

28. **Okika**- He is an Igbo leader and one of the men imprisoned with Okonkwo.

In addition to these, there are several other minor characters also.

14.4 *THINGS FALL APART* - SUMMARY

The title of the novel *Things Fall Apart* is taken from the poem "The Second Coming" by W.B. Yeats. This poem was composed by him to describe the aftermath of World War I. Achebe picked up his title from this poem as he was aware of the potential chaos inherent in Nigeria's bid for freedom from Britain. Like Yeats' poem Achebe's novel also explores the themes of death, destruction and breaking of world order by violence and dissent. The novel faced many rejections before finally getting accepted by Heinemann although the publisher was admittedly apprehensive of novel's audience and its reception. The novel was critical of British imperialism and was quite unflattering to the British culture. Nevertheless it turned out to be huge success and after four years Heinemann chose it as the first book in his African Writers Series. *Things Fall Apart* changed the way the world looked at Africa. Throughout the novel Achebe refers to Igbo people as Ibo which are now an outdated and older spelling.

The story takes place in 1890s which was the beginning of the colonial incursion in the Igboland. Okonkwo, the protagonist of the novel, is a well- respected and wealthy man of Umuofia. Umuofia is one of the nine villages of his clan. It is a fictional village that serves as symbolic heart of the story and much of the action is centered round this village. Okonkwo is a powerful, fierce and aggressive man. He earns respect in his village by defeating Amalinze the Cat, the wrestler who was undefeated for seven years. Okonkwo's father Unoka was a lazy man. He was a gifted musician and a gentle man. He preferred to drink wine and play flute rather than to work. He was considered as a coward as he was afraid of the war. He neither worked hard nor cared much for his land. He died with huge unpaid debts. Okonkwo hated him as he considered his father a coward and his attitude towards him is one of shame and resentment. He lives his life with the intention of avoiding everything that his father relished.

As Okonkwo's father was a lazy man, he fends for himself at an early age. Hence the people in his village like Nwakibe view him as a hardworking and respectful man. He also gives Okonkwo yam seeds to plant, yam being the primary source of food for the Igbo people. But Okonkwo's first planting season is ruined by drought and violent rains. Still he somehow finds a way to survive. Okonkwo is convinced that if he can survive this, he can survive anything. Okonkwo is wealthy and has three wives and several children. One day a boy named Ikemefuna arrives in the village as form of a payment from neighbouring village of Mbaino. He is fifteen years old and he was given to Umuofia as a sacrifice to prevent war. His father was involved in the killing of an Umuofian woman. His responsibility is given to Okonkwo due to his position in the society. Ikemefuna is adopted into the family of Okonkwo. He lives with them for three years. Okonkwo's son Nwoye befriends Ikemefuna and admires him for his skills at making bows from the local trees and building traps for hunting. This pleases Okonkwo whose greatest fear was that his son Nwoye will take after his father Unoka.

Ikemefuna serves as a role model for Nwoye, offering him the emotional support and kindness that Nwoye wishes he got from his father. But at the end of the three years Ikemefuna is sentenced to death for the crimes of his clan and when the priestess Chielo orders that Ikemefuna is to be killed, Ezeudo, a village elder warns Okonkwo not to take part in the killing of Ikemefuna as he regarded Okonkwo as his father and thus killing him would be a sin. But Okonkwo goes ahead and kills the boy because he does not want to appear weak. This is the beginning of Okokwo's downfall and his further estrangement from his son Nwoye. This act permanently damages the relationship between Okonkwo and Nwoye who now begins to question the customs of his people.

Ikemefuna's death turns out to be a bad omen that foreshadows Okonkwo's later exile from Umoufia. After Ikemefuna's death causes Okonkwo great despair and Nwoye is devastated.

Ezinma who is Okonkwo's daughter from his second wife Ekwefi, falls terribly ill with a fever. Ezinma is the only surviving child of Ekwefi. Okonkwo is extremely fond of Ezinma. Although Okonkwo is always able to keep his emotions in touch but on hearing about her illness he rushes to the forest and collects some herbs and tree bark to brew a potion for Ezinma. He puts her over the steam from the potion to breathe in its benefits and cures her of her illness. This demonstration of care falls outside his usual character.

Ezeudo, the oldest man in the village and the one who advised Okonkwo against killing Ikemefuna, dies. During his funeral men beat drums and fire their guns. Okonkwo's gun accidentally explodes during this spiritually charged event and kills Ezeudo's sixteen year old son. Okonkwo is banished from the village for seven years as punishment for killing clansman and his property is burnt down by the people of Umoufia not out of anger but rather to 'cleanse the land'. Okonkwo and his family pack up their belongings and Okonkwo's friends help him to store his yams in Obieriks'a barn. Just before dawn they flee to Okonkwo's mother land Mbanta. There Okonkwo and his family settle with his mother's kinsman. He is treated well by his kinsmen and he prospers among them.

Obierika visits Okonkwo after some time. He informs Okonkwo about the destruction of the Abame clan by the white men. They were destroyed because they killed the first white man who came to their village. The Oracle of the village had warned the villagers that the white men would descend like devouring locusts and destroy them. When the missionaries arrive in Mbanta and request the clan rulers to provide them land to build a church, they are given a part of land in the evil forest because of the belief that the Gods of the clan will destroy the missionaries. A church is built and the missionaries survive. This leads to a change in attitude of the people who now start attending services including the first female convert Nneka who is disgraced for bearing four sets of twins and Nwoye. One day Nwoye's cousin spots him at the church and he informs Okonkwo who is obviously infuriated. He severely beats Nwoye who in retaliation leaves the home and moves to Umuofia. Okonkwo is left wondering how he could beget such a weakling.

In the meanwhile Okonkwo plans a triumphant return home. But he is disheartened to find that Umuofia has changed. A church has been established and the missionaries have settled there now. Okonkwo is infuriated. He wants to destroy the church and kill the missionaries but he is warned against doing so by his friend Obierika. According to Obierika it was too late. A substantial number of people have converted to Christianity and Nwoye is also with them. The British extend their influence further than the church. They set up the government and establish the office of the District Commissioner for judging cases. Mr. Brown, a white missionary has been accepted by the villagers as he was a congenial man who never forced his religion upon the people. He was keen to understand the perspective of the natives and gathered information about their religion, beliefs, customs and rituals. Mr. Brown opens a school where clansmen learn to read and write.

Mr. Brown has to leave from Umuofia due to health issues and another missionary Reverend James Smith replaces him. He is fiery, uncompromising and strict. Unlike Mr. Brown he shows no respect for the customs, beliefs and rituals of the indigenous people and demands that the converts should completely abandon them. His behaviour and attitude epitomizes the problems of colonialism. Enoch who is a fanatical convert to Christian church in Umuofia escalates the conflict between the whites and the clan due to his ruthless behaviour. He commits a crime against the clan due to this the clan members destroy his compound and the church. Okonkwo also participates in this destruction heartily. The District Commissioner takes advantage of this situation and cracks down on the clan jailing six leaders including Okonkwo. In the custody they are mercilessly beaten, their heads are shaved off, they are starved and whipped.

A heavy fine is imposed on their release which the clan pays after three days. Okonkwo becomes eager for revenge. The next morning in the assembly of the clan the clan members gather to discuss the treatment meted out to the prisoners calling it a "shameful sacrilege". Okonkwo is agitated and hopes that the clan will now fight back. In the meanwhile messengers from the court approach the gathering asking them to stop the meeting. In a fit of rage Okonkwo kills a European messenger who tries to stop the meeting of the clan elders. But soon he realizes that his clansmen were reluctant to go to war as he could sense the fear in their minds. He realizes that he is no longer in sync with his people and society. He retreats to his compound and commits suicide by hanging himself.

When the District Commissioner arrives with his men at Okonkwo's compound to arrest him, Obierika solemnly informs them that Okonkwo is not there and quietly leads the group to the place where Okonkwo has hanged himself. As suicide is an abomination in their religion, a "feminine" sin, Okonkwo's clansmen cannot touch his body. He is denied an honourable burial. His clansmen must rely on the soldiers to bury him. The English colonizers retrieve his body for burial but fail to realize the significance of Okonkwo's culture and life. Obierika furiously rebukes the District Commissioner for destroying "one of the greatest men in Umuofia." The District Commissioner contemplates that Okonkwo's story might be worth including in a book that he was writing. He decides that the title of his book will be *The Pacification of the Primitive Tribes of the Lower Niger*.

14.5 THEMES

The novel follows the life of Okonkwo who watches his village being colonized by the British and the Igbo culture and indigenous ways of life gradually falling apart. The author has quite sensitively portrayed a society at the crossroads of history, a community making efforts to reclaim their history and uphold their culture and tradition, religious beliefs and practices. The story appears to be a simple tale of rise and fall of a staunchly obstinate man Okonkwo whose culture is being dismantled through colonization. But in reality it is a complex story. Some of the major themes of the novel are colonization, social disintegration, conflict between tradition and modernity, clash of fate and free will, identity crisis, ambition and masculinity.

The title of the book refers to the pressure exerted by the white missionaries on the Igbo society. The missionaries bring a new religion with them and indulge in mass conversions without any consideration for the indigenous culture, religion and traditions. The colonizers assume that the clan is devoid of customs, traditions or religion and hence are in dire need of enlightenment. On the contrary the Igbo society as described by Achebe has complex culture and customs. There are several instances in the novel that suggest that African societies have a sophisticated culture that did not need Western up gradation. They have vibrant celebrations that mark the beginning and end of harvest season and detailed rituals accompanying weddings and funerals. They possess a culture rich in dance, music, folktales and proverbs. But the colonizers blinded by racism fail to recognize their accomplishments as well as to acknowledge their traditions.

Under the influence of the missionaries the social disintegration of the Igbo society sets in. The outcasts are the first to abandon their traditions and religion and adapt to changes. The traditional practices and the beliefs of the Igbo society receive a great blow. On his return to Umoufia, Okonkwo is quick to realize it. The cross cultural contact and the clash between the African traditions and British culture lead to tragic consequences. Actually the incursion of the colonizers into the self-contained and self-sufficient world of the Igbos creates a conflict leading to the eventual collapse of the Igbo society. The white missionaries convince the villagers who live in synchronization with nature that they were worshipping false Gods and that their Gods are the gods of treachery who would only educate them to kill their own Kith and kin. They strike at the heart of

Igbo beliefs and when they are able to survive and built a church in the Evil Forest, they win the trust of many villagers who willingly embrace Christianity.

The traditional Igbo society is depicted as a well-organized set up with people living in perfect harmony with their environment. They welcome the white missionaries as good strangers and provide them land to live and built their churches. These good strangers after settling down on their lands compel them to abandon their religion, religious beliefs, traditions and practices and embrace Christianity. Here the clash starts. Okonkwo who is the embodiment of Igbo traditions, masculinity and represents the old order is in conflict with the Western Civilization and religion imposed by them. Here the West symbolizes modernity. Achebe while describing the funeral of Ezeudo points out the need for reformation of the ancient rituals or customs in order to remove obsolete practices. Timely reformation would have saved the Igbo practices and way of life from crumbling under the pressure of this new religion. Achebe conveys it through the accidental death of Ezeudo's sixteen years old son by a gunshot. If Okonkwo would have been dancing without the gun, the tragic death of Ezeudo's sixteen years old son could have been avoided. Here the conflict between tradition represented by drums and dance and modernity represented by gun leads to a tragedy which could have been easily averted if this traditional ritual had been reformed. This reformation is necessary to save people's lives.

Imposition of the British traditions on the community threatens to make the traditional ways of farming, governance, trade, cooking and harvesting etc., obsolete. This clash ultimately results in the downfall of Okonkwo whose resistance to modernity leads to his own life falling apart. It also leads to conversion of many young boys like Okonkwo's son Nwoye to Christianity. The young people question the validity and sanctity of their own traditions after feeling cold about some aspects and practices of Umuofian society. The outcasts find the much needed solace and salvation in Christianity. This struggle is represented on the individual level by Okonkwo and on the societal level by the actions of his fellow clansmen who are perplexed and unable to decide the future course of action to deal with this clash. They fail to recognize that "the only constant in the world is change."

Another significant theme of the novel is the clash of fate and free will. Okonkwo feels disgusted with his father. He aspires to rise above his means. He aspires to be a successful and socially well-respected man unlike his father who was a lazy man with no aspirations. His father whiled away his life drinking palm wine and playing flute. He died as a debtor. Okonkwo believes that he can overcome the fate set for him by his father through his hard work. He labours hard on the farm and through his hard work he is able to climb up the social ladder and carve a niche for himself in the society. He is well known for his wrestling prowess. His success is attributed not to his fate or luck but to his *chi* or personal God. "At the most one could say that his *chi* or personal god was good. But the Igbo people have a proverb that when a man says yes his *chi* says yes also. Okonkwo said yes very strongly; so his *chi* agreed."

But when the tide turns against him he starts blaming fate for it. Ikemefuna's violent death and accidental death of Ezeudo's son are the events that lead to reversal of his fortune. When his gun accidentally splinters and kills one of Ezeudo's sons Okonkwo is exiled. This is a crime of manslaughter according to the Igbo traditions. Okonkwo is banished from Umoufia for seven years. For Ikemefuna's death he blames the Oracle though like his friend Obierika he could have easily avoided taking part in it.

Okonkwo does exercise his will and it plays a major role in determining his future. He chooses to kill Ikemefuna. He also chooses to kill a government official. In the end he also kills himself. Whether or not the misfortune that befalls him is related to these events, is debatable. Okonkwo exemplifies Heraclitus' dictum that character is fate. In a large measure he is seen as

responsible for bringing his downfall upon himself. His inflexible attitude, unwavering rigidity, inability to adapt, ambitions and aggression constitute his tragic flaws. Though Okonkwo believed that several aspects of his life have been pre-determined by the Gods, Achebe contradicts it by skillfully by providing logical justifications for unfortunate events in Okonkwo's life.

Identity crisis has been dealt with quite sensitively by Achebe in the novel. Unoka is viewed as a failure in the traditional Igbo society. Okonkwo is ashamed of his father and is determined to carve a niche for himself in the society and win titles unlike his father. He works hard to show his mettle. He becomes a wealthy farmer and is well respected. But as the story progresses it becomes evident that Okonkwo's fear of being like his father is not actually the fear of being physically weak. On the contrary it is the fear of being rejected by his community for not conforming to the traditional values. Okonkwo's sense of identity is deeply rooted in the ancient Igbo values and with the incursion of the European colonizers his sense of self is threatened. He is not able to reconcile with the fact that change in the society was now inevitable. His identity crisis is deepened by the advent of European culture and Christianity and this leads him to develop a deep sense of alienation and self- loss.

14.6 SPECIFIC FEATURES OF *THINGS FALL APART*

Things Fall Apart is the most widely read and discussed novel of Achebe and the critical material on this novel will run into several volumes if it is compiled as a single text. Not even a single phrase or expression from the book has been left without a comment. Such is the appeal and reach of this text. There are certain unique features that endow this text with a mesmerizing strength. Achebe has presented a traditional society at the cross roads of history. The people of this society are apprehensive of the changes that the colonial rule and their religion are imposing on their lives. The author is successful in narrating a complex story in an easy manner. The blending of the oral narration with the written discourse and artful technique of story-telling along with simplicity and universality of the themes as well as style of narration are the unique features that make it a modern classic. On the surface it looks like a simple tale of the rise and fall of a headstrong and obdurate man Okonkwo who is impulsive, short tempered and impatient. With the help of a number of incidents the author has painted the character of Okonkwo but the novel is not simply the story of rise and fall of an individual but of a society at the cross roads of history. The simplicity of the novel is quite deceptive as the novel turns out to be the story of a whole clan, a whole society and a whole way of life on the verge of extinction due to the onslaught of Christianity. Numerous incidents that have a significant bearing on the Ibo society of Umoufia have been depicted in the novel. The description of the lifestyle, traditions, customs, celebration of festivals and birth and death rituals of the Ibo society by the author establishes that it was not a primitive society but a quite complex one. The manner in which justice was publicly dispensed with the help of egwugwu masks or the observance of a peace week before the sowing season etc., focus the attention of the readers on the systematic arrangement and organization of the society.

Instead of describing the qualities of the characters or the society, the author reveals them through a brief reference to certain episodes hence building a deceptive aura of simplicity and only half revealing a very complex text within. This constitutes the major strength of the novel.

Things Fall Apart is a story of conquest of the indigenous culture and societies by the white colonial powers. This conquest and suppression of indigenous cultures was not confined to only Africa but it was expanded to India, China, Greek and Egyptian civilizations and societies. In other words it is also a story of individuals or societies who or which grew rigid in their outlook and with the passage of time failed to change or adapt to the circumstances let alone coming to terms with them. It is true of individuals like Okonkwo and Societies like Ibo society and hence in this sense this novel is about the human predicament itself and is universal in character.

One of the most unique strengths of this novel is its straightforward diction and simple sentence structure along with incorporation of folk material like Ibo proverbs, metaphors and sayings in the text. Some of the native proverbs that Achebe uses in the text are like 'A child cannot pay for its mother's milk,' 'A toad does not run in the day time for nothing' and 'if a child washed his hands he could eat with kings.' etc. Achebe has woven these folk elements in the rich tapestry of his narrative. The novel has been written in the third-person omniscient point of view. This narrative style creates a sense of formality befitting a historical narrative. Being an omniscient narrator the author can share the thoughts and feelings of all the characters. He does not judge their actions. In fact he provides a neutral perspective on characters, their actions and events. This narrative style provides a multi voiced perspective on Africa's colonization by the European powers.

The novel is divided into three parts and its narrative style falls into a cyclical pattern. The novel chronicles the early life of Okonkwo in Umoufia (his fatherland), his exile to Mabanta (his motherland) for seven years and his journey back to his fatherland Umoufia after his exile. The narrative maps onto a gendered narrative structure functioning in counterpoint to Okonkwo's own obsession with his masculinity.

Through his narrative Achebe has been successful I portraying the characters as complex and multi-dimensional instead of the simple stereotypes as painted by the other European authors.

14.7 LET US SUM UP

Chinua Achebe's novel *Things Fall Apart* is considered as a classic novel. The endurance of its popularity among, readers, translators and critics all over the world is a testimony to it. It is a critique of the European and American colonial narratives. It is an important text that depicts the effect of colonial rule on African societies. Sometimes it is suggested that it is an over-simplistic work, just an account of the life of the protagonist that lacks depth or complexity. But the impact of the novel is enormous. It is a portrayal of a complex society on the verge of change. Achebe builds up a universal element in the portrayal of this society and its culture and traditions. In fact it considered as a novel about the human predicament itself. This makes it specific as well as universal at the same time.

The novel has adapted the oral tradition of story- telling common among the Igbos and this narrative style gives the impression of being simple but it is not so. He has made an extensive use of native Igbo words and proverbs by weaving them skillfully into the structure of English language. It lends complexity to his use of language and style. Hence *Things Fall Apart* is considered as a modern classic.

14.8 QUESTIONS

1. Discuss the major events and key moments in *Things Fall Apart*.
2. Discuss in detail the significance and presentation of family relations in *Things Fall Apart.*
3. What is the significance of the title *Things Fall Apart*? Discuss in detail.
4. What is the significance of Achebe's integration of African literary forms with that of Western literary forms?
5. Identify instances in *Things Fall Apart* that portray variations in African cultures.
6. Examine critically the varied themes of the novel *Things Fall Apart*.

14.9 FURTHER READINGS

1. Achebe, Chinua. *Morning Yet on Creation Day*. Heinemann, London. 1975. Print.

2. Chinua Achebe : Biography, Books and Facts. *Britannica*. N.p. n.d. Web. https ://www.britannica.com/biography/Chinua-Achebe. 22 November 2024.
3. Larson, Charles. R. *The Emergence of African Fiction*. Macmilan Press Ltd, London). 1978. Print.
4. Palmer, Eustace. *An Introduction to the African Novel*. Heinemann, London. 1972. Print
5. Wright, Edgar. *The Critical Evaluation of African Literature*. Heinemann, London. 1972. Print.
6. Yanksa, Kofi, E. *Chinua Achebe's Novels : Socio Linguistic Perspective*. Pacific Publishers. Nigeria. 1990. Print.

UNIT-15 DENNIS BRUTUS : AT A FUNERAL

Structure

15.0 Objectives

15.1 Introduction

15.2 Dennis Brutus : Biographical Sketch

15.3 *At A Funeral* (Text)

15.3.1 Summary of the Poem

15.4 Analysis and Interpretation of the poem

15.5 Poetic Devices

15.6 Sum Up Let's

15.7 Questions

15.8 Further readings

15.0 OBJECTIVES

In this unit, learners will be able

- Study the biography of the poet
- Know Dennis Brutus as a poet and his literary works
- Study the contribution of Dennis Brutus in new literatures in English

15.1 INTRODUCTION

Dennis Vincent Brutus was a South African activist, educator, journalist and poet best known for his campaign to have South Africa banned from the Olympic Games due to its racial policy of apartheid.

15.2 DENNIS BRUTUS : BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCH

Born in Salisbury, Southern Rhodesia in 1924 to South African parents, Brutus was of indigenous Khoi, Dutch, French, English, German and Malay ancestry. His parents moved back home to Port Elizabeth when he was aged four, and young Brutus was classified under South Africa's apartheid racial code as "coloured".

Brutus was a graduate of the University of Fort Hare (BA, 1946) and of the University of the Witwatersrand, where he studied law. He taught English and Afrikaans at several high schools in South Africa after 1948, but was eventually dismissed for his vocal criticism of apartheid. He served on the faculty of the University of Denver, Northwestern University and University of Pittsburgh. and was a Professor Emeritus from the last institution.

In 2008, Brutus was awarded the Lifetime Honorary Award by the South African Department of Arts and Culture for his lifelong dedication to African and world poetry and literary arts.

Brutus was an activist against the apartheid government of South Africa in the 1950s and 1960s. He learned politics in the Trotskyist movement of the Eastern Cape.

Although not an accomplished athlete in his own right, he was motivated by the unfairness of selections for athletic teams. He joined the Anti-Coloured Affairs Department organisation (Anti-

CAD), a Trotskyist group that organised against the Coloured Affairs Department, which was an attempt by the government to institutionalise divisions between blacks and coloureds. In 1958, he formed the South African Sports Association, and as Secretary was strongly opposed to a proposed cricket tour by Frank Worrell's West Indies to South Africa in 1959, leading a successful campaign to have it cancelled. In 1962, Brutus was a co-founder of the South African Non-Racial Olympic Committee (SANROC), an organisation that would be heavily influential in the banning of apartheid-era South Africa from the Olympics in 1964. In 1961, Brutus was banned for his political activities as part of SANROC. As South Africa attempted, in 1968, to get back into the Olympics by arguing that they would field multi-racial teams, SANROC successfully pointed out that those teams were chosen on a segregated basis, leading to South Africa's continued ban from 1968 until 1992. In 1963, Brutus was arrested for trying to meet with an International Olympic Committee (IOC) official; he was accused of breaking the terms of his "banning," which were that he could not meet with more than two people outside his family, and he was sentenced to 18 months in jail. However, he "jumped bail" by trying to leave South Africa to attend the IOC meeting in Baden-Baden, West Germany, on behalf of SANROC and while he was in Mozambique, on a Rhodesian passport, the Portuguese colonial secret police arrested him and returned him to South Africa. There, while trying to escape, he was shot in the back at point-blank range. After only partly recovering from the wound, Brutus was sent to Robben Island for 16 months, five in solitary. He was in the cell next to Nelson Mandela's. Brutus was in prison when news of the country's suspension from the 1964 Tokyo Olympics, for which he had campaigned, broke. Brutus was forbidden to teach, write and publish in South Africa. His first collection of poetry, *Sirens, Knuckles and Boots* (1963), was published in Nigeria while he was in prison. The book received the Mbari Poetry Prize, awarded to a black poet of distinction, but Brutus turned it down on the grounds of its racial exclusivity. He was the author of 14 books. After he was released, in 1965, Brutus left South Africa on an exit permit, which meant he could never return home while the apartheid regime stayed in power. He went into exile in Britain, where he first met George Houser, the executive director of the American Committee on Africa (ACOA). South Africa made a concerted effort to get reinstated to the Olympic Games in Mexico City in 1968. Its Prime Minister John Vorster outlined a new policy of fielding a multi-racial team. At first the IOC accepted this new policy and was going to allow South Africa to compete, but SANROC pointed out that there would be no mixed sporting events within South Africa and therefore all South African athletes chosen for the Games would be chosen under a segregated framework. In 1967, Brutus came to the United States under the auspices of the ACOA on a speaking tour, where he acquainted Americans more closely with the present situation in South Africa, informed American sports organisations about the segregated conditions that South African athletes must endure, and raised money to support the ACOA's Africa Defense and Aid Fund to support the defence of those charged under the apartheid laws. The Supreme Council for Sport in Africa, which represented the independent African nations at the IOC, threatened to boycott if South Africa was included in the 1968 Games. In co-operation with SANROC, the ACOA organised a boycott of American athletes in February 1968. Jackie Robinson, the first African-American athlete to break the colour barrier in major league baseball, published a statement calling for continued suspension of South Africa from the Olympic Games. As a result of the international pressure, the IOC relented and kept South Africa out of the Olympic Games from 1968 until 1992. In 1971, Brutus settled in the United States, where he served as professor of African Literature at North-Western University. When his British passport was cancelled in the wake of Zimbabwe's independence in 1980, he was threatened with deportation, and he fought a protracted and highly publicized legal battle until 1983, when he was granted asylum in the United States. He continued to participate in protests against the apartheid government while teaching in the United States. He was eventually "unbanned" by the South African government in 1990, and in 1991 he became one of the sponsors of the Committee for Academic Freedom in Africa. Brutus taught

at Amherst College, Cornell University, and Swarthmore College, before heading, in 1986, to the University of Pittsburgh, where he served a professor of African Literature until his retirement.Brutus died on 26 December 2009, aged 85, at his home in Cape Town, South Africa, from prostate cancer. He is survived by two sisters, eight children including his son Anthony, nine grandchildren, and four great-grandchildren.

Works

His poetry collections include Salutes and Censure(1985, Stuborn Hope (1978), Letter to Maratha and other poems from a South African Prison (1969), Poetry and Protest : a Dennis Brutus Reader(2006) was edited by Aisha Karim and Lee Sustar, and The Denis Brrtus Tapes : Essay at Autobiography (2011) was edited by Bemth Lindfors.

15.3 AT A FUNERAL

(Text)

Black, green, and gold at sunset : pageantry
And stubbled graves : expectant, of eternity,
In bride's-white, nun's-white veils the nurses gush their bounty
Of red-wine cloaks, frothing the bugled dirging slopes
Salute! Then ponder all this hollow panoply
For one whose gifts the mud devours, with our hopes.

Oh, all you frustrate ones, powers entombed in dirt,
Aborted, not by Death but carrion books of birth
Arise! The brassy shout of Freedom stirs our earth;
Not death but death's head tyranny scythes our ground
And plots our narrow cells of pain, defeat, and dearth :
Better that we should die, than that we should lie down

15.3.1 Summery of the Poem

Dennis Brutus's poem ***"At a Funeral"*** raises questions about death, the meaning of life, and the importance of resistance and activism in the face of oppression. It serves as a call to action, prompting readers to reflect and strive for a more just society.

The poem tells the poignant story of a young woman named Valencia Majombozi, an African woman who overcame immense obstacles to become a doctor, thanks to the unwavering support and sacrifices made by her parents. Against all odds, Valencia earned her medical degree and successfully completed her internship. Tragically, in a cruel twist of fate, she lost her life during the Sharpeville Massacre, shortly after starting her career as a doctor.

The speaker, who attended Valencia's funeral, reflects on the years of struggle and sacrifice that ultimately amounted to nothing. The poem can be interpreted as an expression of thwarted and unfulfilled dreams, highlighting the harsh reality faced by many oppressed individuals. These people are unable to reach their full potential and live their lives to the fullest due to the limitations imposed upon them by their circumstances.

The poem also carries a powerful message of resistance and perseverance. The speaker implores the oppressed to rise up against their circumstances and fight for their rights – ***"Arise!".*** In the face of such adversity, the speaker contends that it is better to die than to succumb to a life marked by ***"defeat and dearth."*** The poem serves as a call to action, urging individuals to actively challenge the oppressive forces that hold them back, rather than passively accepting their fate.

Significance of the Title of the poem

The title of the poem, *"At a Funeral",* immediately establishes the somber and reflective tone of the piece.It situates the reader at a funeral, a soleman event where people gather to mourn the loss of a loved one and celebrate their life. In this case , the poem is dedicated to Valenica Majombozi, making it deeply personal and evoking a stronger emotional response from the reader.

The specificity of the title underscores the poet's intention to pay tribute to Valencia and her tragically short-lived accomplishments. By emphasizing that her dreams and hopes were destroyed by death "shortly after qualifying," the poet conveys a sense of frustration and aborted hopes. This detail intensifies the reader's feelings of sadness and injustice, as Valencia's hard-earned success is abruptly taken away from her.

Furthermore, the title invites the reader to reflect on the broader implications of Valencia's story. *"At a Funeral"* serves as a reminder of the fleeting nature of life and the vulnerability of dreams and aspirations, particularly for those living under oppressive circumstances. By focusing on a specific individual and her tragic fate, the poet encourages the reader to empathize with Valencia's story while also contemplating the larger themes of loss, sacrifice, and the struggle for freedom and self-actualization.

In summary, the title "***At a Funeral"*** effectively sets the stage for a poignant and thought-provoking exploration of one individual's life and untimely death. The poem pays tribute to Valencia Majombozi while also delving into the universal themes of loss, unfulfilled dreams, and the resilience of the human spirit in the face of adversity.

15.4 ANALYSIS OF THE POEM

Line 1 : Black, green, and gold at sunset : pageantry

The poem operates on a political level, referencing the African National Congress (ANC) flag, which is black, green, and gold. The colors are not coincidental, as many of the doctor's colleagues attending the funeral wore university robes adorned with black caps and gowns, gold hoods for arts degrees, and green for science degrees. The colors symbolize the struggle against apartheid. The **sunset** represents the end of the day, symbolizing death and evoking a somber mood filled with darkness and sadness. The **pageantry** suggests a ceremonial display, which ultimately seems insignificant in the face of the young doctor's death and the dashed hopes and dreams it signifies.

Line 2 : And Stubbled Graves : Expectant, Of Eternity,

Stubbled graves refer to the neglected and untidy appearance of the graves, covered in dead grass stalks. the graveyard is personified as being hungry or **expectant** for more bodies, emphasizing the inevitability of death. the term **eternity** is ambiguous, either suggesting that the dead will remain in their graves for an eternity or referring to the belief that the afterlife **will not end.**

Lines 3-4 : In bride's-white, nun's-white veils the nurses gush their bounty of red-wine cloaks, frothing the bugled dirging slopes

Nurses from the hospital attended the funeral wearing white veils, reminiscent of brides and nuns, symbolizing innocence, purity, holiness, and new life. The nurses are willing to give everything to save the lives of those fighting for liberation. The terms **gush** and **bounty** emphasize the abundance of grief displayed by the nurses. The **frothing** highlights the number of nurses present, and the **bugled dirging** suggests a military funeral, with the land itself seemingly mourning the young doctor.

Line 5 : Salute! Then ponder all this hollow panoply

The command **Salute!** signifies honoring or saluting the dead, as one would a soldier. The speaker asks the reader to **ponder** or contemplate the implications of the funeral and death in general, encouraging them to look beyond the superficial display that lacks sincerity. The **hollow panoply** refers to the seemingly meaningless ceremony with flags and speeches, which ultimately changes nothing.

Line 6 : For one whose gifts the mud devours, with our hopes.

The term 'one' refers to Valenica Majombozi (deceased) and 'gifts' refers to her ability as a doctor to heal and bring comfort to others. The term **devour** emphasizes that all her hopes and those of her people are now buried in the earth, creating a tone of despair and sadness.

Line 7 : Oh all you frustrate ones, powers tombed in dirt,

The poet uses an apostrophe (a figure of speech) to address the dead directly. The dead are powerful enough to cause frustration (to the government) rather than being passively frustrated. They are described as powers **tombed** in dirt, indicating that their potential is buried because of their deaths.

Line 8 : Aborted, not by Death but carrion books of birth

The dead are described as being **aborted** (i.e., killed before they could live), not by Death but by **carrion** books of birth, a reference to the Pass Books that symbolize the cruel apartheid laws. The apartheid government is considered even more cruel and deadly than death itself.

Line 9 : Arise! The brassy shout of Freedom stirs our earth;

The dead are directly addressed and told to rebel or "Arise!" against the government, with the exclamation mark emphasizing the command's defiant tone. "Freedom" is capitalized to show its importance, personified as shouting to wake the dead. Describing Freedom's shout as **brassy** refers to the bugle in line 4, which was used to play the "dirge"/Last Post. Here, music does not send the dead to their rest but awakens them.

Line 10 : Not death but death's-head tyranny scythes our ground

Understanding the symbol of "death's-head tyranny" is helpful : the skull and crossbones insignia used by the Nazis, who are regarded as great heroes by the South African regime and imitated by its people. The poet compares the South African apartheid government to the death-head wearing Nazis in World War 2. **Scythes** refers to the violent cutting down of lives, and "our ground" references the land where the Group Areas Act excluded people of color.

Line 11 : And plots our narrow cells of pain defeat and dearth

Plots, here is a pun, referring to a small piece of land (e.g., a plot where a grave is dug) or planning something, often with evil intent. Narrow cells of pain could refer to graves, prison cells where apartheid prisoners were jailed, or the small houses in disadvantaged areas where people of color were forced to live due to the Group Areas Act. **Dearth** means things that are in short supply, such as food or basic necessities. The poet implies that pain, suffering, and death were deliberately caused by the apartheid government.

Line 12 : Better that we should die, than that we should lie down –

The term *"lie down"* suggests surrendering or submitting. The poet implies that it is better for people to resist apartheid and die rather than give up or surrender. The absence of a full stop after "we should lie down" indicates that there is no end to resistance and no surrender. This line also implies that the poet has come to terms with the tragedy of the young doctor's death—she died rather than choosing to "lie down" or surrender to apartheid, and the poet sees this as "better." The poet uses "we" and thus identifies with the struggle against apartheid.

15.5 Poetic Device of the Poem

- **Diction**

The use of diction in ***"At a Funeral"*** by Dennis Brutus is significant in conveying the poem's themes and emotions. The poet carefully chooses words that evoke strong imagery and enhance the reader's understanding of the message. Some examples of the diction used in the poem include :

- **"Pageantry" :** The word "pageantry" refers to an elaborate display or ceremony, which sets the stage for the funeral scene and conveys the gravity of the situation.
- **"Stubbled" :** The adjective "stubbled" describes the graves as rough and protruding, reflecting the hardships faced by the oppressed people.
- **"Expectant" :** The word "expectant" suggests anticipation, highlighting the idea of waiting for change or freedom that the oppressed people long for.
- **"Eternity" :** The term "eternity" emphasizes the timeless and unending nature of the sacrifices made in the fight against apartheid.
- **"Frothing" :** The verb "frothing" creates an image of intense emotion, such as anger or excitement, further adding to the poem's sense of urgency and despair.
- **"Bugled dirging" :** This phrase refers to the playing of a funeral song on a bugle, a trumpet-like instrument, which contributes to the somber atmosphere of the funeral scene.
- **"Hollow" :** The adjective "hollow" implies emptiness and meaninglessness, which characterizes the feelings of the speaker as they reflect on the futility of the sacrifices made by Valencia and her family.
- **"Carrion" :** The word "carrion" refers to the decaying flesh of a dead animal, symbolizing the idea of wasted potential and the tragic consequences of the apartheid regime.

The diction used in the poem is carefully chosen to create vivid imagery, evoke emotions, and emphasize the themes of oppression, sacrifice, and the struggle for freedom. Through his word choices, Brutus is able to effectively convey the complex emotions and ideas that underpin the poem's message.

- **Rhyme and Meter**

The poem ***"At a Funeral"*** by Dennis Brutus does not follow a consistent rhyme scheme or meter. The lack of a structured rhyme pattern and meter contributes to the overall sense of unease and unpredictability that reflects the poem's themes of frustration, unfulfilled dreams, and the harsh reality faced by those living under the apartheid regime. The absence of a regular rhyme scheme and meter also allows the poet to focus on the content and imagery, enabling the reader to become immersed in the emotional and thematic aspects of the poem rather than being distracted by a predictable rhythmic structure. This choice reflects the poem's intention to provoke thought and evoke strong emotions in the reader, rather than adhering to traditional poetic conventions.

- **Imagery**

Imagery in this poem plays a crucial role in conveying the emotions and themes associated with the tragic story of **Valencia Majombozi** and the broader context of apartheid in South Africa. Some examples of the imagery used in the poem include :

- **“Black, green, and gold at sunset” :** This imagery represents the colors of the African National Congress (ANC) flag, invoking a sense of national pride and the fight for freedom.
- **“Stubbled graves” :** The description of graves as “stubbled” creates a visual image of rough, protruding surfaces, symbolizing the harsh reality and difficulties faced by the oppressed.
- **“Expectant, of eternity” :** This image suggests that the graves are waiting for eternity, emphasizing the timeless nature of the sacrifices made by those who fight for freedom.
- **“Nurses gush their bounty of red-wine cloaks, frothing the bugled dirging slopes” :** The vivid imagery of nurses with red-wine cloaks and the sound of funeral music creates a somber atmosphere, painting a picture of a funeral scene and emphasizing the gravity of the situation.
- **“Hollow panoply” :** The use of “hollow” to describe the panoply (impressive display or array) suggests that the elaborate ceremonies and displays associated with the funeral are ultimately empty and meaningless in the face of such tragic loss.
- **“The mud devours” :** This imagery personifies the mud as a force that consumes and destroys, emphasizing the futility of the sacrifices made by Valencia and her family.
- **“The brassy shout of Freedom” :** The imagery of a “brassy shout” stirs a sense of strength, determination, and resilience, as the call for freedom rings out loudly and boldly.

By employing vivid and evocative imagery, the poem allows readers to visualize and emotionally connect with the somber funeral scene, the tragedy of Valencia Majombozi’s story, and the broader struggle against apartheid in South Africa.

- **Symbolism**

1. **The Tree :** The tree is a symbol of life, strength, and resilience. The image of the tree being "felled" is a powerful symbol of the devastating impact of death.
2. **The Funeral :** The funeral is a symbol of the ritual of mourning and the communal expression of grief.

- **Imagery :** The poem uses vivid and evocative imagery to describe the funeral scene and the speaker's emotions.
- **Metaphor :** The comparison of the deceased to a "tree" that has been "felled" is a powerful metaphor that conveys the sense of loss and devastation.
- **Alliteration :** The repetition of the "s" sound in "softly spoken words" creates an alliterative effect that adds to the poem's musicality.
- **Enjambment :** The use of enjambment throughout the poem creates a sense of flow and continuity, mirroring the speaker's emotions and thoughts.

- **Tone and Mood**

The tone of the poem is somber and reflective, as the speaker mourns the tragic loss of Valencia Majombozi and contemplates the senselessness of her death. The tone also carries a sense of

defiance and determination, particularly when the speaker encourages the oppressed to rise up and fight against the injustice they face.

The mood of the poem is predominantly melancholic and somber, evoking feelings of sorrow, frustration, and anger. The reader is likely to empathize with the sense of loss and the unfulfilled dreams of Valencia Majombozi and others like her. However, the poem also stirs a sense of hope and resilience, as the speaker's call to action inspires a determination to challenge and resist the oppressive forces that cause such suffering.

- **Themes of the Poem**

1. **Mortality :** The poem confronts the reality of death and the finality of mortality.
2. **Grief** : The speaker expresses their emotions and thoughts at the funeral, conveying a sense of loss and sadness.
3. **Struggle for Justice** : The poem touches on the theme of struggle for justice and equality, hinting at the broader social and political context in which the deceased lived and died.
4. **Memory and Legacy** : The poem reflects on the memory and legacy of the deceased, emphasizing the importance of remembering and honoring those who have passed on.

Here is an analysis of the structure of the poem "At a Funeral" by Dennis Brutus :

- **Structure**

- **Stanza Structure**

The poem consists of 4 stanzas, each with 4-5 lines. The stanzas are not uniform in terms of line length or rhyme scheme.

- **Line Structure**

The lines in the poem vary in length, with some lines having 5-7 syllables and others having 10-12 syllables. The lines do not follow a consistent rhythm or meter.

- **Rhyme Scheme**

The poem does not have a consistent rhyme scheme. There are occasional internal rhymes and assonances, but no overall rhyme scheme.

Poetic Form

The poem does not conform to a specific poetic form, such as sonnet or villanelle. It appears to be a free verse poem, with a focus on natural speech rhythms and enjambment.

Enjambment

The poem uses enjambment throughout, with sentences and phrases flowing into the next line without punctuation. This creates a sense of flow and continuity, mirroring the speaker's emotions and thoughts.

Caesura

The poem uses caesura (pauses within a line) to create a sense of drama and emphasis. This is particularly effective in the final stanza, where the speaker reflects on the deceased.

Syntax and Word Order

The poem's syntax and word order are often unconventional, with phrases and sentences fragmented or inverted. This creates a sense of disjointedness and fragmentation, mirroring the speaker's emotions and thoughts.

15.7 LET US SUM UP

The poem ***"At a Funeral"*** by Dennis Brutus is a reflection on the death of a friend and the speaker's emotions and thoughts at the funeral. The poem explores themes of mortality, grief, and the struggle for justice and equality. Overall, "At a Funeral" is a powerful and moving poem that explores themes of mortality, grief, and the struggle for justice and equality. The poem's use of imagery, metaphor, and other poetic devices creates a somber and contemplative tone, inviting the reader to reflect on the human experience.

15.8 QUESTIONS

Q.1 Give brief life sketch of Dennis Brutus.

Q.2 Discuss the contribution of literary works of Dennis Brutus.

Q.3 Discuss the poetic device of the poem *At A Funeral.*

Q.4 Discuss the title of the poem, *At A Funeral*.

Q.5 Write summary of the poem, *At A Funeral.*

15.9 FURTHER READINGS

- Poetry and Protest : A Dennis Brutus Reader Publisher's page includes video of Brutus and a remembrance by Any Goodman
- Brutus, Dennis, The Dennis Brutus Tapes : Essays at Autobiography (edited by Bernth Lindfors), James Currey, 2011, p. 23.
- Brutus, Dennis, Poet , teacher, s[ortsman speaking on : I was a prisoner on Robbern Island and Topics related to apartheid"
- American Committee on Africa. Undated, late 1966 or early 1967. Retrieved 10 January 2021.
- *Tikkanen, Amy (24 November 2021)."Dennis Brutus" Encyclopedia Britannica.*
- Griffiths, Ross, and Bridgette Woodall, "The Dennis Brutus Collection" 10 November 2020, Worcester State University Libguides. Retrieved 10 January 2021.
- "*An Activitist until the end* " *News24. 27 December 2009. Retrieved 9 December 2023.*
- *"The Dennis Brutus Tapes : Essays at Autobiography"*, James Currey/Boydell & Brewer, 201

UNIT-16 DEREK WALCOTT "A FAR CRY FROM AFRICA"

Structure

16.0 Objectives

16.1 Introduction

16.2 Derek Wallcott

16.2.1 About the Poet : Biography

16.2.2 Writing Style of the Poet

16.2.3 Some Major Poems of Dereck Walcott

16.3 "A Far Cry from Africa"

16.3.1 Background and Introduction of the Poem

16.3.2 Title of the Poem

16.3.3 Theme of the Poem

16.3.4 "A Farcry From Africa" (Text)

16.3.5 Stanza wise Explanation of the Poem

16.3.6 Analysis and Critical Appreciation of the Poem

16.3.7 Literary Devices in the Poem

16.4 Glossary

16.5 Let Us Sum Up

16.6 Questions

16.7 Further Readings

16.0 OBJECTIVES

After reading this unit learners will be able to :

- Know about the poet Derek Walcott.
- Get the information about the writing style and major works of the poet.
- Know the background and introduction of the Poem
- Understand the title of the Poem
- Know the various themes of the Poem
- Understand the poem with the help of Stanza Wise Explanation
- Analyze and do critical appreciation of the Poem
- Know the various literary devices in the poem

16.1 INTRODUCTION

Derek Walcott, a Nobel Laureate and a towering figure in Caribbean literature, is celebrated for his deep exploration of cultural identity, history, and the complexities of Post Colonialism. His writing style is characterized by vivid imagery, rich narrative structures, and a deep engagement with

his Caribbean heritage. In studying his poems, it is essential to first understand Walcott's background and the broader context in which he wrote, as these elements often inform his themes and perspectives. The title of the poem can offer a window into its central concerns, often encapsulating the essence of the poem's themes. This comprehensive approach to studying Derek Walcott's poetry not only highlights his artistic genius but also deepens our appreciation of his contributions to world literature.

"A Far Cry from Africa" is one of Derek Walcott's most renowned poems. This powerful and evocative piece explores the poet's complex identity, torn between his African and European heritage, against the backdrop of the Mau Mau Uprising in Kenya. The poem Deals with the themes of colonialism, cultural conflict, and the struggle for identity. It also reflects Walcott's own mixed-race background and the broader historical tensions between colonizers and the colonized.

16.2 DERECK WALCOTT

16.2.1 About the Poet : Biography

Early life and education : Dear learners, in this unit we are going to talk about the inspiring life of the Twentieth-century West Indian poet and playwright Derek Walcott. He was an influential personality in the literary world famous for his impactful poetry, engaging dramas, and thought-provoking essays. Derek Walcott was born on the beautiful island of Saint Lucia in the Lesser Antilles, West Indies on January 23, 1930. His father, Alix (Maarlin) and mother Warwick Walcott, who was a teacher. Dereck was actually born a twin, and sadly, his father, who was a civil servant and a talented painter, passed away when Derek and his twin brother were just one year old. As a result, Derek never really got to know his father, except through the stories his family shared about him. His mother, provided the environment where their talents could be nurtured. She used to recite poetry to Derek and his brother. Walcott's family belonged to a small Methodist community, which found itself in the minority against the backdrop of the island's prevalent Catholic culture. The influence of Catholicism had been firmly established during the period of French colonial rule, casting a shadow over the Methodist community and contributing to their sense of being marginalized.

Derek faced tough situations while growing up, and some of these hardships inspired his poetry. Walcott was raised in a multifaceted cultural environment influenced by the island's colonial past. His mixed heritage, comprising African, Dutch, and English ancestry, greatly impacted his writing and perspective. Walcott was very talented since his childhood. He drew deeply from the experiences of his family, particularly his grandmothers, who lived through the era of slavery. The impact of his Caribbean upbringing is evident in both his life and his poetic work. He studied to become a writer and became "an elated, exuberant poet madly in love with English" (Poetry Foundation). He was strongly influenced by modernist poets such as T. S. Eliot and Ezra Pound. He debuted in the literary field at the age of 18 with "In a Green Night". Before this at the age of 14 he published his first poem, a Miltonic which is a religious poem, in the newspaper *The Voice of St Lucia*. At 19, Walcott self-published his first two collections with the help of his mother, who paid for the printing : "25 Poems" (1948) and "Epitaph for the Young : XII Cantos" (1949). He sold copies to his friends to cover the costs.

He became passionate for the arts when he was in St. Mary's College and the University of the West Indies. After completing his studies at the University of the West Indies in Jamaica, Walcott continued his education at the University of New Brunswick in Canada. Although he did not finish his degree, his time in Canada exposed him to new literary influences and provided fertile ground for his creative development.

Literary Career

Despite the challenges of growing up in a colonial society, Walcott's passion for literature and theatre flourished, setting him on a path to become one of the Caribbean's most celebrated writers. Dereck Walcott founded the *Trinidad Theatre Workshop* in 1959, seeking to promote Caribbean theater and provide a platform for local talent. He also wrote many plays for this theatre. He advocated for Caribbean literature and life. Walcott's literary career was characterized by a prolific output spanning poetry, drama, and essays.

His plays, such as *Dream on Monkey Mountain* (1970) and *Ti-Jean and His Brothers* (1958), combined elements of Caribbean folklore with incisive social commentary, earning him international acclaim. The play *Dream on Monkey Mountain* was first staged by the Negro Ensemble Company in New York City in 1971 and received the "Best Foreign Play" Obie Award that year. In the subsequent year, Walcott was honoured with an OBE from the British government for his contributions. For many years, he divided his time among Saint Lucia; Boston University, where he taught; and Trinidad, where he managed a theater. Walcott also worked as an artist and combined his poetry with painting in the volume Tiepolo's Hound (2005). He also taught in Boston University and there he founded the Boston Playwrights' Theatre in 1981.

In addition to his theatrical achievements, Walcott's poetry remains his most enduring legacy. His verses are characterized by their lush imagery, musicality, and profound exploration of themes such as identity, exile, and the legacy of colonialism. Works like *The Star-Apple Kingdom* (1979) and *The Fortunate Traveller* (1981) showcase his mastery of language and his deep connection to the Caribbean landscape.

Walcott's crowning achievement came in 1992 when he was awarded the Nobel Prize in Literature, becoming the second Caribbean writer to receive this honor after Saint-John Perse. The Nobel Committee applauded him for his "poetic oeuvre of great luminosity, sustained by a historical vision, the outcome of a multicultural commitment". This recognition solidified his status as a literary giant and brought global attention to Caribbean literature.

Throughout his life, Derek Walcott remained deeply engaged with the complexities of Caribbean history and culture. His writing grappled with the traumas of colonialism, the struggles of postcolonial identity, and the enduring beauty of the Caribbean landscape. His legacy continues to inspire generations of writers and readers, ensuring that his voice will resonate for years to come. Derek Walcott passed away on March 17, 2017, leaving behind a rich and enduring literary legacy that transcends geographical and cultural boundaries.

A list of poetry collections by Derek Walcott :

- 1948 : 25 Poems
- 1949 : Epitaph for the Young : Xll Cantos
- 1951 : Poems
- 1962 : In a Green Night : Poems 1948-60
- 1964 : Selected Poems
- 1965 : The Castaway and Other Poems
- 1969 : The Gulf and Other Poems
- 1973 : Another Life
- 1976 : Sea Grapes

- 1979 : The Star-Apple Kingdom
- 1981 : Selected Poetry
- 1981 : The Fortunate Traveller
- 1983 : The Caribbean Poetry of Derek Walcott and the Art of Romare Bearden
- 1984 : Midsummer
- 1986 : Collected Poems, 1948–1984, featuring “Love After Love”
- 1987 : The Arkansas Testament
- 1990 : Omeros
- 1997 : The Bounty
- 2000 : Tiepolo's Hound, includes Walcott's watercolors
- 2004 : The Prodigal
- 2007 : Selected Poems (edited, selected, and with an introduction by Edward Baugh)
- 2010 : White Egrets
- 2014 : The Poetry of Derek Walcott 1948–2013
- 2016 : Morning, Paramin

Awards and Recognition :

- 1969 : Cholmondeley Award
- 1971 : Obie Award for Best Foreign Play (for *Dream on Monkey Mountain*)
- 1972 : Officer of the Order of the British Empire
- 1981 : MacArthur Foundation Fellowship (“genius award”)
- 1988 : Queen’s Gold Medal for Poetry
- 1990 : Arts Council of Wales International Writers Prize
- 1990 : W. H. Smith Literary Award (for poetry *Omeros*)
- 1992 : Nobel Prize in Literature
- 2004 : Anisfield-Wolf Book Award for Lifetime Achievement
- 2008 : Honorary doctorate from the University of Essex
- 2011 : T. S. Eliot Prize (for poetry collection *White Egrets*)
- 2011 : OCM Bocas Prize for Caribbean Literature (for *White Egrets*)
- 2015 : Griffin Trust for Excellence in Poetry Lifetime Recognition Award
- 2016 : Knight Commander of the Order of Saint Lucia

Source : Wikipedia

16.2.2 Writing Style of the Poet

So, dear learners, we have finished the biography and literary career of the poet Derek Walcott. Now we will focus on the writing style of the poet. Let us first discuss the imagery. Walcott’s poetry is renowned for its vivid and evocative imagery, which transports readers to the

landscapes of the Caribbean. He often employs sensory language to paint detailed pictures of the natural world, which captures the sights, sounds, and smells of his surroundings. His imagery is rich with symbolism and metaphor.

The next characteristic of Walcott's poems is its musical language. He paid careful attention to the cadence and flow of his words, creating poems that are meant to be read aloud and savored for their auditory beauty. His use of repetition, alliteration, and assonance enhances the musical quality of his verse, which enhances the lyrical quality and makes it captivating and immersive.

If I talk about the dominant theme of Walcott's poetry then it is the exploration of Identity. Identity is a central theme in Walcott's work, and he often grapples with questions of belonging, heritage, and cultural identity. He explores the complexities of Caribbean identity in the context of colonialism and globalization, probing the tensions between local and global, past and present, self and other. His writing reflects a deep engagement with his own mixed heritage and the diverse cultural landscape of the Caribbean.

Walcott's poetry is infused with a keen historical consciousness. It reflects his interest in the history of the Caribbean and its impact on contemporary life. He draws on historical events, figures, and myths to explore themes of power, oppression, and resistance. His work often serves as a means of reclaiming and reinterpreting Caribbean history, challenging dominant narratives and giving voice to marginalized perspectives.

As a writer, Walcott deeply attuned to the complexities of language, Walcott frequently explores the interplay between different linguistic traditions in his work. His poetry is characterized by a polyphony of voices, blending English with Creole and other Caribbean dialects to create a uniquely Caribbean literary idiom. This linguistic diversity reflects the multicultural reality of the Caribbean and adds richness and depth to his writing.

In short, Derek Walcott's writing style is characterized by its beauty, depth, and complexity. His poetry uses strong descriptions, beautiful language, and thoughtful exploration of who we are and our past. It's poetry that is both beautiful and makes you think, and it has a big effect on readers all over the world.

16.2.3 Some Major Poems of Derek Walcott

We have already seen Derek Walcott's list of works which he has written throughout his prolific career, many of which are considered masterpieces of contemporary literature. Some of the major poems by Derek Walcott are :

1. **"Omeros" :** It is regarded as one of Walcott's most significant works, "Omeros" is an epic poem published in 1990. Drawing inspiration from Homer's *Iliad* and *Odyssey*, Walcott reimagines the ancient Greek epics in a Caribbean setting. Set in Saint Lucia, the poem explores themes of identity, history, and the legacy of colonialism through the stories of ordinary people living in the Caribbean.
2. **"The Sea is History" :** This poem, published in Walcott's collection *The Star-Apple Kingdom* (1979), is a powerful meditation on the Caribbean's colonial past and its impact on the present. Through vivid imagery and evocative language, Walcott traces the history of the Caribbean from the arrival of European colonizers to the struggles of its indigenous and enslaved peoples.
3. **"The Schooner Flight" :** This long poem, published in Walcott's collection *The Star-Apple Kingdom* (1979), follows the journey of a Caribbean sailor named Shabine as he navigates the waters of the Caribbean and grapples with questions of identity, exile, and belonging. The

poem is notable for its lyrical language, rich imagery, and exploration of Caribbean culture and history.

4. **"Love After Love" :** This celebrated poem, included in Walcott's collection *Collected Poems, 1948-1984* (1986), is a moving reflection on self-discovery and self-acceptance. Through simple yet profound language, Walcott encourages readers to embrace themselves fully and celebrate their own inner beauty and worthiness.

5. **"The Prodigal" :** Published in Walcott's collection *White Egrets* (2010), "The Prodigal" is a poignant exploration of memory, mortality, and the passage of time. The poem follows the speaker's return to his childhood home in Saint Lucia and reflects on the changes that have occurred over the years, both in the landscape and in the lives of the people he once knew.

16.3 "A FAR CRY FROM AFRICA"

16.3.1 Background and Introduction of the Poem

The present poem was first published in 1962 in his poetry collection *In a Green Night : Poems 1948-1960*. The poem reflects Walcott's complex relationship with his African heritage and his Caribbean identity in the context of colonialism and political unrest.

As we have seen that Derek Walcott was born and raised in Saint Lucia, a Caribbean island that was once colonized by European powers, primarily the British and the French. The legacy of colonialism deeply influenced Walcott's upbringing and worldview. "A Far Cry from Africa" deals with the complexities of colonial history and its impact on Caribbean society. The poem explores Walcott's ancestral ties to Africa and his sense of displacement as a Caribbean writer of African descent. Like many Caribbean intellectuals of his time, Walcott was drawn to the history and culture of Africa as a source of identity and inspiration. However, he also recognized the distance—both geographical and cultural—that separated him from the continent.

In this poem, we can get the references of the Mau Mau Uprising*. So, you are surprised by this name Mau Mau. I have explained about this uprising in the end of this portion. It is a violent struggle for Kenyan independence against British colonial rule that took place in the 1950s. Walcott was deeply affected by the events of the Mau Mau rebellion, which inspired him to reflect on the complexities of political resistance and ethnic identity.

"A Far Cry from Africa" is not only a commentary on colonialism and African history but also a deeply personal exploration of Walcott's own identity and sense of belonging. The poem reflects his ambivalence towards Africa as both a source of cultural heritage and a distant, unfamiliar land.

In writing this poem, Walcott beautifully explores the idea of belonging by using vivid imagery, evocative language, and historical references. He reflects on the distance between his Caribbean home and the continent of Africa, as well as the intense struggles for independence during that time.

*Mau Mau Uprising : The Mau Mau Uprising, also known as the Mau Mau Rebellion, was a significant and violent conflict that took place in British Kenya between 1952 and 1960. It involved a revolt by the Kikuyu people, along with other ethnic groups, against British colonial rule and their policies, especially land confiscation and economic exploitation. Here are some **About the Mau Mau Uprising :**

Origins and Causes : The Mau Mau Uprising was driven by several key grievances, in which land dispossession, forced labour, low wages, and the lack of political representation for native Kenyans under British rule were major one. The term "Mau Mau" itself is believed to have derived

from the Kikuyu phrase "Mzungu Aende Ulaya, Mwafrika Apate Uhuru", meaning "Let the Europeans go back to Europe, let the African get independence".

The Kikuyu is the name of the largest ethnic group in Kenya and they were especially affected by land alienation. A large portion of their fertile land was taken by British settlers, which lead to widespread poverty and fostered deep anger within them.

The Mau-Mau Movement : The Mau-Mau was a powerful nationalist movement predominantly made up of the Kikuyu, with additional members from the Embu and Meru communities. The movement was characterized by its secret oath ceremonies, which bound members to the cause of fighting for freedom from colonial rule. The revolt officially began in 1952 when Mau Mau fighters launched attacks on European settlers and loyalist Africans. The British colonial government declared a state of emergency and deployed military forces to suppress the rebellion. The conflict involved guerrilla warfare in the forests and mountains of central Kenya. Both sides committed atrocities. The Mau Mau were responsible for brutal attacks on settlers and loyalist Africans, while the British response included mass detentions, torture, and the execution of suspected Mau Mau fighters.

What were the impact and Consequences of this movement? The conflict resulted in significant loss of life. Estimates suggest that tens of thousands of Kikuyu were killed, and many more were detained in camps where conditions were harsh. The brutality of the British response, including the use of detention camps and the widespread use of torture, eventually attracted international condemnation and contributed to the growing momentum for decolonization.

What is the Aftermath of this movement? The Mau Mau Uprising did not immediately achieve its goals, but it played a crucial role in the larger movement for Kenyan independence. The state of emergency ended in 1960, and Kenya eventually gained independence in 1963, with Jomo Kenyatta, a former detainee accused of Mau Mau involvement, becoming the first Prime Minister and later President of Kenya.

The Mau Mau Uprising remains a pivotal event in Kenyan history, symbolizing the struggle against colonial oppression and the fight for independence. It has left a lasting effect on the country's national consciousness and historical narrative.

16.3.2 Title of the Poem

The title of the poem, "A Far Cry from Africa", effectively summarizes the main themes and tensions explored in the text. Through this title, Walcott conveys a sense of geographical and metaphorical distance between the poet's Caribbean homeland and the continent of Africa. The phrase "A Far Cry from Africa" suggests a vast physical separation between the Caribbean and Africa. Geographically, the Caribbean islands are located thousands of miles away from the African continent. This distance highlights the poet's sense of displacement and separation from his African heritage. It also highlights the literal remoteness of Africa from the poet's lived experience.

The title also implies a metaphorical or emotional gap between the poet and Africa. The poet acknowledges a sense of disconnection or alienation from the continent. This distance reflects the complexities of identity and belonging experienced by individuals of African descent living in the diaspora, who deal with the legacy of colonialism and cultural displacement.

Let us try to understand the words of the title deeply. The word "Africa" carries rich symbolic weight within the context of the poem. It represents not only the poet's ancestral homeland but also a broader sense of African identity and heritage. By juxtaposing the Caribbean with Africa in the title, Walcott invites readers to contemplate the complexities of diasporic identity and the enduring influence of African culture on Caribbean societies. The term "cry" in the title suggests a

call or lamentation, hinting at the emotional resonance of the poem. It evokes a sense of longing, anguish, or protest, reflecting the poet's struggle with themes of colonization, violence, and political turmoil. The cry serves as a metaphor for the poet's struggle to reconcile his Caribbean identity with his African heritage, echoing the voices of those caught between multiple worlds and histories.

In short, the title "A Far Cry from Africa" captures distance, displacement, and the search for identity in the wake of colonialism.

16.3.3 Theme of the Poem

In Derek Walcott's "A Far Cry from Africa", the poet explores the complex themes of identity, colonialism, and the quest for self-determination. He examines his ancestral connections to Africa while addressing the historical context of Caribbean colonialism and cultural displacement. Ultimately, Walcott aims to explain the lasting effects of colonization on personal and collective identity.

The poem's central message explores diasporic identity and the quest for belonging. Walcott reflects on his own displacement as a Caribbean writer of African descent, acknowledging the physical and metaphorical distance that separates him from Africa. He confronts the complexities of heritage and cultural memory, highlighting the challenges of reconciling multiple cultural identities in the aftermath of colonialism.

Furthermore, Walcott discusses the violence and injustice carried out by colonial powers. He has given the reference of historical events like the Mau Mau Uprising in Kenya to emphasize the harshness of colonial rule. The poem critiques imperialism and oppression, emphasizing how violence and conflict impact the experiences of displacement and trauma for individuals and communities.

In "A Far Cry from Africa", Derek Walcott reflects on the enduring struggles for freedom and self-determination faced by colonized peoples around the world. He highlights the ongoing legacies of colonization and urges readers to confront the complexities of history. The poem emphasizes the importance of preserving cultural traditions and honoring the legacies of those who have come before. Finally, Walcott offers a pitiful reflection on the complexities of identity, heritage, and colonial history. The poem serves as a powerful testament to the enduring resilience of the human spirit in the face of adversity. Through the poem, the poet is inviting readers to contemplate the ways in which history shapes our understanding of ourselves and the world around us.

16.3.4 "A Far Cry from Africa"

(Text)

A wind is ruffling the tawny pelt

Of Africa. Kikuyu, quick as flies,

Batten upon the bloodstreams of the veldt.

Corpses are scattered through a paradise.

Only the worm, colonel of carrion, cries :

"Waste no compassion on these separate dead!"

Statistics justify and scholars seize

The salients of colonial policy.

What is that to the white child hacked in bed?

To savages, expendable as Jews?
Threshed out by beaters, the long rushes break
In a white dust of ibises whose cries
Have wheeled since civilization's dawn
From the parched river or beast-teeming plain.
The violence of beast on beast is read
As natural law, but upright man
Seeks his divinity by inflicting pain.
Delirious as these worried beasts, his wars
Dance to the tightened carcass of a drum,
While he calls courage still that native dread
Of the white peace contracted by the dead.
Again brutish necessity wipes its hands
Upon the napkin of a dirty cause, again
A waste of our compassion, as with Spain,
The gorilla wrestles with the superman.
I who am poisoned with the blood of both,
Where shall I turn, divided to the vein?
I who have cursed
The drunken officer of British rule, how choose
Between this Africa and the English tongue I love?
Betray them both, or give back what they give?
How can I face such slaughter and be cool?
How can I turn from Africa and live?

16.3.5 Stanza Wise Explanation of the Poem

Lines 1-3

A wind is ruffling the tawny pelt
Of Africa. Kikuyu, quick as flies,
Batten upon the bloodstreams of the veldt.

Explanation : In the first three lines the poet is trying to evoke a vast picture of African plain or veldt which is disturbed by the colonisers. In the beginning of the poem the poet says that a wind is disturbing the smoothness of the golden-brown grass which is like the long hairs on the body of an animal. Here the poet has used the wind for Britishers or colonisers who have disturbed the smooth life of African people. Before them they were living very peacefully but now these Britishers have created havoc in their life. The poet has also compared Africa with an animal perhaps lion and whose hairs or fur are like the savannas or grasslands of Africa. So, through these lines the poet says

that as wind disturbs the grasslands in the same way colonisers have disturbed the smooth life of Africans. In the next line the poet says that the Kikuyu people are very quick and fast as flies. That is why they easily understood that these Britishers have not come in their country for trade but came here to make them colonized. That is the reason this community have become violent for the blood of Britishers. They are so quick to take the action and hence they fed the land of African land with blood. They are like flies who sit on the wound (Colonisers). The word "Kikuyu" is a name of a native tribe in Kenya. The poet has compared the Kikuyu people with the flies and their action with the action of flies who sit on the wound. Here the veldt is the uncultivated grasslands and these are the bloodstreams of Africa. So, the poet says that Kikuyu people swiftly and intensely take action on those who are exploiting the vital resources of the African grasslands. In these poetic lines, the Kikuyu are compared to flies (buzzing around the "animal" of Africa) who are feeding on blood, which is present in large enough amounts to create streams.

Comments :

- "Kikuyu" : The word "Kikuyu" serves as the name of a native tribe in Kenya.
- **Metaphor** : The "tawny pelt of Africa" is a metaphor comparing Africa to an animal with a tawny-coloured fur coat.
- **Simile** : The phrase "quick as flies" is used to compare the Kikuyu people to flies in terms of their speed.
- **Personification :** The wind is personified as "ruffling" the pelt of Africa, giving it a human-like action.
- **Alliteration :** The repetition of the initial consonant sounds in "Kikuyu, quick" creates a musical effect.
- **Imagery :** Vivid imagery is used to describe the scene, painting a picture of Africa's landscape and the Kikuyu people.
- **The choice of words is difficult and not easy to understand quickly.**
- **Free verse**

Line 4-8

Corpses are scattered through a paradise.

Only the worm, colonel of carrion, cries :

"Waste no compassion on these separate dead!"

Statistics justify and scholars seize

The salients of colonial policy.

Explanation : Through these lines the poet is presenting the imagery of death and decay. He says that in the perfect place (paradise which is Africa), death is prevalent because of the dead bodies of colonizers on the land of Africa. The ruler (colonel) of British army who is like a worm says that no compassion should be wasted on these dead bodies, decaying remains because they deserve such death. The phrase suggests a detachment from individual sorrows or deaths, perhaps indicating a broader sense of suffering and injustice that transcends individual losses. Walcott seems to be coping with the idea of mourning or showing compassion for those who have died in conflicts fired by colonialism and political strife and at the same time he shows the merciless, brutal face of colonizers.

The last line critique the ways in which colonial powers used intellectual and statistical arguments to justify their domination and exploitation of colonized peoples. It also highlights the participation of scholars and the manipulation of information in perpetuating colonialism. The poet says that the Colonial powers would often use data and numbers to support their cruel actions, presenting them as necessary or beneficial for various reasons such as economic development or civilizing missions. These statistics could be manipulated or interpreted in ways that served the interests of the colonizers.

Comments :

- Visual Image : The phrase "Corpses are scattered through a paradise" creates a stark visual image that contrasts death with the idea of paradise.
- Metaphor : The worm being called the "colonel of carrion". Here the worms are compared to a military officer commanding dead bodies.
- Irony : The idea of a paradise filled with corpses is deeply ironic. It highlights the tragic situation.
- Alliteration : The repetition of the 'c' sound in "colonel of carrion cries" and 's' sound in "statistics justify and scholars seize" creates a rhythmic effect.
- Juxtaposition : The contrasting images of "paradise" and "corpses", as well as "statistics" and "colonial policy", highlight the cold, calculated nature of colonialism against the backdrop of human suffering.
- Symbolism : The worm symbolizes death and decay, while the scholars and statistics symbolize the cold rationality and justification of colonial policies.
- Personification : worms are personified.

Lines 9-14

What is that to the white child hacked in bed?

To savages, expendable as Jews?

Threshed out by beaters, the long rushes break

In a white dust of ibises whose cries

Have wheeled since civilization's dawn

From the parched river or beast-teeming plain.

Explanation : These lines are full with powerful imagery and evoke strong emotions about the violence and dehumanization associated with colonialism and racial prejudices.

The first line seems to present a horrific image of a white child who is brutally murdered while in bed by the Africans who killed him in anger. The murder of a child symbolizes the innocence destroyed by violence. This rhetorical question of the poet implies a sense of moral outrage and shock. What was the fault of that innocent child and what was the fault of those African who were living their life peacefully who are being killed mercilessly like Jews were murdered by Hitler during the Holocaust. The poet considers them as savage and their action as dehumanized and considered expendable. The comparison highlights the extreme racism and cruelty inherent in such views.

In the next line the poet describes a scene where he tells that African people were hunters (beaters) and they force animals out of hiding in the long rushes (tall grasses) by beating their drums.

When the white ibises, a type of bird, comes out screaming of the grass they hunt them. This image again cause chaos and destruction. It creates a visual of white dust. The cries of the ibises suggest distress or mourning. The poet says that the cries of the ibises have been a constant presence since the beginning of human civilization from the dry river or a field full of animals. It symbolizes the perpetual nature of suffering and conflict. In the final line the poet contrasts two environments : a dry, lifeless riverbed and a plain filled with animals. This highlights the harsh and varied landscapes where these scenes of violence and pursuit occur. In short, the poet says that violence is in the blood of Africans and therefore this is (violence of colonizers) not new for them.

Comments :

- **Rhetorical Question :** The line uses a rhetorical question to provoke thought and emphasize the horror and senselessness of the violence.
- **Alliteration :** The repetition of the 'b' sound in "beaters" and "break" creates a rhythmic effect.
- **Imagery :** The "white dust of ibises" creates a visual image of the birds and their disturbed environment.
- **Symbolism** : Ibises may symbolize purity or the natural world, and their cries suggest distress.
- Metaphor : here a comparison between the brutality being committed here and the ones committed by the Nazis during second World War can be seen.

Lines 15-21

The violence of beast on beast is read

As natural law, but upright man

Seeks his divinity by inflicting pain.

Delirious as these worried beasts, his wars

Dance to the tightened carcass of a drum,

While he calls courage still that native dread

Of the white peace contracted by the dead.

Explanation : These lines seem to reflect on the idea of violence and its place in human nature. The speaker suggests that animals fighting each other is seen as a natural occurrence, but humans seek to elevate themselves by inflicting pain. The poet says that their violent nature could be justified because they are living in such circumstances but if Britishers who considers themselves as divine nature or God like spread violence and oppress people so it confuses Africans. So, it is just to say that they are very civilized and divine creatures and they only oppress Africans on the name of civilization but actually they were like beast. The mention of "upright man" may refer to humanity's attempt to assert dominance or power over others.

In the next line the poet says that Man is so hungry for power that he wants to rule over other weak people with his power as Africans or Kikuyu tribes wanted to rule over animals and control over them in the same way Britishers also wanted to rule over Africans as they were weak. In short, the poet wants to say that human beings are fighting with each other without any reason and then they celebrate their victory by beating the drum which is made by the dead animal's skin. (in African custom whenever a new thing start or end they celebrate it by beating the drum) and so, the poet says that this war in which humans are fighting with human is a kind of dance of fury whose costs lives of

lakhs of people and they celebrate it by beating drums. The imagery of "worried beasts" and "tightened carcass of a drum" conveys a sense of fear and tension, perhaps indicating to the destructive nature of human conflicts. It is a natural instinct that whenever human attacks on animals for hunting animals try to save themselves by counter attack not by the intention of harm but to protect themselves. in the same way when Britishers attack on Kikuyu tribe or African they resist it by their war technique so that they would not be killed. so here the poet says that this counter attack is not the real courage but it is. animalistic fear by which they are fighting with colonizers and Britishers get satisfied by killing them who resist them. here the poet criticizes both of them.

Further the speaker seems to question whether courage is truly found in the midst of war, or if it is merely a facade concealing the fear and destruction that accompany it. The final line about "white peace contracted by the dead" could be interpreted as a commentary on the paradox of peace achieved through violent means.

Comments :

- Alliteration : The repetition of the 'b' sound in "beast on beast".
- Metaphor : The phrase "violence of beast on beast" serves as a metaphor for primal and instinctual conflict.
- Juxtaposition : Contrasts the "natural law" of animals with the behavior of "upright man", suggesting a difference between instinctual and human actions.
- Symbolism : "Upright man" symbolizes humanity's self-perception of moral and intellectual superiority. "White" can symbolize purity or surrender, while "contracted by the dead" implies peace is only achieved through the ultimate sacrifice, death.
- Imagery : "Delirious" and "worried beasts" create a vivid image of confusion and fear. "White peace" suggests a cold, sterile, and perhaps false peace achieved through death.
- Metaphor : The "tightened carcass of a drum" metaphorically represents the rhythmic, almost ritualistic nature of war, with "carcass" evoking death.
- Personification : The drum is given life-like qualities, suggesting it drives or animates the actions of war.
- The diction and structure suggest a critique of humanity's pursuit of power and divinity through destructive means, ultimately questioning the true nature of courage and peace.

Lines 21-26

Again brutish necessity wipes its hands

Upon the napkin of a dirty cause, again

A waste of our compassion, as with Spain,

The gorilla wrestles with the superman.

I who am poisoned with the blood of both,

Where shall I turn, divided to the vein?

Explanation : In these lines, the poet seems to be grappling with the idea of conflict and the struggle for power. The mention of "brutish necessity" suggests a sense of inevitability and harsh reality. the poet says that the Africans were brutally attacking on the Britishers because it was necessary to take revenge from them. To justify their violence, they were fighting the war against colonisers and they are saying that it is the necessity. The reference to "the napkin of a dirty cause" could be interpreted

as the aftermath of a violent or unjust situation. The cause is dirty on which they are fighting the war therefore Africans cannot justify their action, it is like wiping hands in a dirty napkin. That is why the poet is saying that showing compassion is waste because both Britishers and Africans both are brutally fighting and killing each other. Here the poet has given reference of Spain where the same kind of war was fought between 1936-39.

The comparison of "the gorilla" and "the superman" could represent the struggle between the primal, untamed nature of humanity and the idealized, powerful figure of a superman. The poet says that Africans (Gorilla) are wrestling with superman (colonizers).

Now the poet shifts his attention to himself. The speaker's feeling of being "poisoned with the blood of both" suggests a deep conflict within themselves who is torn between opposing forces. It means that the poet Dereck Walcott had the blood of two countries. His grandmother was Black and his grandfather was British citizen. That is why he says that I'm poisoned with the both blood so whom can I support. The final question, "Where shall I turn, divided to the vein?" reflects the speaker's inner turmoil and the difficulty of finding a clear path forward in the face of such conflict.

Comments

- **Metaphor : 1-** "Again brutish necessity wipes its hands / Upon the napkin of a dirty cause" - This metaphor compares necessity to a person wiping their hands on a napkin, suggesting that harsh realities are being justified by morally questionable reasons.

  2- "The gorilla wrestles with the superman" - This metaphor compares a primitive force ("the gorilla") to a more evolved or idealized force ("the superman"), representing a struggle between base instincts and higher ideals.

- **Imagery** : 1- "wipes its hands / Upon the napkin of a dirty cause" which evokes a clear visual of someone trying to clean themselves of guilt or dirt, and

  2- "The gorilla wrestles with the superman" which conjures an image of a physical struggle.

- **Allusion** : 1- "As with Spain" - This allusion refers to the Spanish Civil War, drawing a parallel between past conflicts and the current situation being discussed.

  2- "The gorilla" and "the superman" can also be seen as allusions to philosophical or literary concepts, with "superman"

- **Irony** : There is a sense of irony in the phrase "wipes its hands / Upon the napkin of a dirty cause", as the act of cleaning hands is contrasted with the notion of a "dirty" cause, implying that the cause cannot truly be cleansed.

- **Oxymoron** : "Poisoned with the blood of both" – This phrase juxtaposes the notion of being poisoned with blood, which is life-giving, creating an oxymoronic effect that emphasizes inner conflict and turmoil.

- **Enjambment :** The poem uses enjambment, where sentences and phrases run over from one line to the next without a terminal punctuation mark, creating a sense of flow and continuity. For example, "I who am poisoned with the blood of both, / Where shall I turn, divided to the vein?"

Lines 26-31

I who have cursed

The drunken officer of British rule, how choose

Between this Africa and the English tongue I love?

Betray them both, or give back what they give?

How can I face such slaughter and be cool?

How can I turn from Africa and live?

Explanation : In this stanza, it seems that the speaker reflects on his past anger and condemnation of the British colonial rulers, symbolized by the "drunken officer". This suggests a history of oppression and resentment towards colonialism. The poet says that he is cursing the British officers who have slaughtered the Africans. How he can choose between Africa and the English tongue he loves, as he has the blood of two states. He is torn between his loyalty to Africa and his love for the English language, a result of colonial influence. This line highlights the speaker's internal conflict between their cultural heritage and the language that has become a part of their identity. He further says that he cannot betray both or can give back what they have given him. The speaker contemplates the difficult choice of either betraying both Africa and the English language or reciprocating the betrayal he feels from the colonial powers. This line emphasizes the moral and emotional dilemma faced by the speaker. Hence, he cannot face such slaughter and be cool. The speaker questions how they can remain composed in the face of the violence and atrocities ("slaughter") that they witness or are aware of. This line reflects the intense emotional struggle and the challenge of maintaining composure amid chaos and violence. and he cannot leave Africa and live somewhere else. In this way, the poet show his dilemma and confusion that he belongs to both the countries and both are in trouble and he cannot support any one. In this way, the poem ends with a questioning situation.

Comments :

- **Alliteration** : The repetition of the 'c' sound in "curse" and "cool" and the 'b' sound in "betray" and "both" add a musical quality to the poem.
- **Consonance** : Similar to alliteration, consonance is seen in the repetition of consonant sounds, as in "Betray them both, or give back what they give?"
- **Internal Conflict** : The entire poem revolves around the speaker's internal conflict regarding their identity and loyalties, making this a central theme.

16.3.6 Analysis and Critical Appreciation of the Poem

The central idea of Derek Walcott's poem "A Far Cry from Africa" is the poet's inner conflict over his mixed heritage in the context of colonial violence. Walcott deals with his dual identity as both African and European during the Mau Mau Uprising in Kenya. The poem reflects on the brutality of both the colonizers and the colonized. The poet highlights his struggle to reconcile his divided loyalties and the broader implications of colonialism on personal and cultural identity. Through vivid imagery and emotional language, Walcott conveys the anguish of a fractured self amid historical and contemporary injustices.

The title "A Far Cry from Africa" reflects Derek Walcott's sense of geographical and emotional distance from Africa, despite its deep impact on his identity. It suggests a vast difference and separation by highlighting his disconnection from his African heritage and the ambivalence of his mixed identity. The title encapsulates the poem's themes of identity, belonging, and the complexities of a colonial legacy and set the tone for the poet's struggle to reconcile his divided loyalties.

- **Analysis of the poem**

The poem is taken from the collection *In a Green Night* (1962). It is divided into two stanzas with the first stanza carrying 21 lines and the next stanza carrying 11 lines. It is written in free verse. The

poem starts with the poet's harsh experience of life. The poem is a reflection that tells how Britishers have changed the tranquil peaceful setting of the African country. The poem is deeply rooted in Africa. The language used helps to make the poem feel culturally African.

At the beginning of the poem, it can be seen that Africa has been compared with an animal having long hairs and wind with the Britishers. The speaker of the poem is the poet himself. The poet says that the Britishers came and created havoc in Africa as the wind created a mess in the grasslands of Africa. But Kikuyu, a tribe of Africa were very quick to understand the reason behind their coming and hence they objected to them. They started quickly taking action by opposing them and consequently soon everywhere dead bodies were lying on the land of Africa. For The colonel of Britishers these Africans are only worms and therefore no compassion should be shown to them. The scholars will justify the colonial policy and seize the data of the dead. The poet criticizes and asks the question of what was the fault of that white baby who was murdered while sleeping on the bed. This is a very depressing image of death presented by the poet. This murder is as brutal as the murder of Jews by Hitler in the war of murdered Jews. Here a very bitter and pathetic image of war has been presented.

Further, the poet shifts the attention to the hunting. So, the poet says that these hunting activities were long back way of living for Africans. The Africans were treated by the Britishers like animals. They beat the drums in a loud noise so that white ibises come out from long bushes and they can hunt these birds. When these birds run, the white dust spreads everywhere and with the dust, their cries spread everywhere. The cry can be heard from the parched river to the grassland full of animals. The cry of these birds is very long means the cry of suppressed people is age-old, i.e. since civilization started. Here again, it can be said that hunters are the symbol of white colonizers who are in search of African natives who are hiding behind the long bushes and are running to save themselves. Their cry is a voice of suppressed. The poet further says that animals kill other animals because it is natural law but here in this world, man shows superiority over others by causing pain to the lower one. This is not humanity but shows an animalistic attitude. Here the binary opposition can be seen. The colonizers are restless like the colonized people. Humans are confused in the name of power. Further, the poet says that the Africans play drums made from the skin of the animals killed in hunting. Here the poet has used metaphor that depicts the wars as a dance, but instead of dancing to music, they are dancing to the rhythm created by a drum made from a tightened carcass. This evokes a sense of death and brutality, as the drum is made from the skin of a dead animal. The subject (likely a leader or warrior) misnames or glorifies fear as courage. "Native dread" refers to a primal or instinctive fear, suggesting that what is being called courage is actually a deep, inherent terror.

In the next lines the poet says that that brutal, animalistic necessity (perhaps the inevitable need for violence or survival in war) is at work. The phrase "wipes its hands" implies a sense of routine or resignation, as if this brutality is an unavoidable and recurring part of life. The underlying motivations for the war, are impure or ignoble and cannot be wiped out by napkin. Wiping hands on a napkin suggests a superficial attempt to clean up or justify these dirty motives. In summary, by using rich, metaphorical language in these lines the poet is trying to convey the senselessness, brutality, and underlying fear inherent in war, critiquing how leaders or societies might glorify these negative aspects under the guise of courage and necessity.

In the last four lines of the poem the poet Dereck Walcott lines express a deep internal conflict and a sense of despair over the futility of compassion in the face of certain struggles. The speaker feels caught between two opposing forces, symbolized by the gorilla and the superman, and this division is a source of profound inner turmoil. These lines convey a sense of inner conflict and the futility of certain struggles. The poet says that showing compassion in this context is futile,

perhaps referencing the Spanish Civil War or another historical conflict in Spain where compassion did not resolve the underlying issues. The pot has used the symbols of gorilla and superman. This metaphor contrasts primal, animalistic force ("the gorilla") with an idealized, superior human figure ("the superman"). It symbolizes a struggle between brute force and a higher, possibly moral or intellectual, power. This could reflect a broader conflict between barbarism and civilization. Further the poet says that he, who has poisoned with the blood of both, means he has both aspects- the primal as well as the idealized. The word "poisoned" suggests that this duality is harmful, causing inner turmoil. The speaker feels deeply conflicted, as if this division runs through his very blood. He is uncertain where to find resolution or peace, feeling torn between opposing forces within himself.

The poem doesn't have a strict rhyming pattern, but it does have end rhymes scattered throughout. It is written in free verse, which gives it an unnatural and split feel that reflects the emotions expressed in the poem. The rhythm is also inconsistent, with varying beats in each line, adding to the sense of discord.

The poem doesn't have a strict rhyming pattern, but it does have end rhymes scattered throughout. It's written in free verse, which gives it a stilted and disjointed feel that reflects the emotions expressed in the poem. The rhythm is also inconsistent, with varying beats in each line, adding to the sense of discord country in the 1950s. The persona, probably the poet himself, can take favour of none of them since both bloods circulate along his veins. He has been given an English tongue which he loves on the one hand, and on the other, he cannot tolerate the brutal slaughter of Africans with whom he shares blood and some traditions. His conscience forbids him to favour injustice. He is in the state of indecisiveness, troubled, wishing to see peace and harmony in the region. The poem reveals the extent of Walcott's consternation through the poet's inability to resolve the paradox of his hybrid inheritance.

Split identity, anxiety, isolation, cruelty, violence, religion and love are the major themes of the poem.Walcott belongs to both African and European roots and he identifies himself as a mongrel; both grandmothers were African and both grandfathers were European. Walcott's hybrid heritage prevents him from identifying directly with one culture and creates a sense of anxiety and isolation. The wind "ruffling the tawny pelt of Africa" refers to the cruelty of Mau-Mau insurrection against the violence of British colonialism. The words "corpses, paradise, dead, Jews and cursed" create an atmosphere of religion in the poem. Walcott's feeling of affection for Africa and fondness for English tongue propagate the theme of love country in the 1950s. The persona, probably the poet himself, can take favor of none of them since both bloods circulate along his veins. He has been given an English tongue which he loves on the one hand, and on the other, he cannot tolerate the brutal slaughter of Africans with whom he shares blood and some traditions. His conscience 8 forbids him to favour injustice. He is in the state of indecisiveness, troubled, wishing to see peace and harmony in the region. The poem reveals the extent of Walcott's consternation through the poet's inability to resolve the paradox of his hybrid inheritance. Split identity, anxiety, isolation, cruelty, violence, religion and love are the major themes of the poem. Walcott belongs to both African and European roots and he identifies himself as a mongrel; both grandmothers were African and both grandfathers were European. Walcott's hybrid heritage prevents him from identifying directly with one culture and creates a sense of anxiety and isolation. The wind "ruffling the tawny pelt of Africa" refers to the cruelty of Mau-Mau insurrection against the violence of British colonialism. The words "corpses, paradise, dead, Jews and cursed" create an atmosphere of religion in the poem. Walcott's feeling of affection for Africa and fondness for English tongue propagate the theme of country in the 1950s. The persona, probably the poet himself, can take favour of none of them since both bloods circulate along his veins. He has been given an English tongue which he loves on the one hand, and on the other, he cannot tolerate the brutal slaughter of Africans with whom he shares blood and some traditions. His conscience 8 forbids him to favour injustice. He is in

the state of indecisiveness, troubled, wishing to see peace and harmony in the region. The poem reveals the extent of Walcott's consternation through the poet's inability to resolve the paradox of his hybrid inheritance. Split identity, anxiety, isolation, cruelty, violence, religion and love are the major themes of the poem. Walcott belongs to both African and European roots and he identifies himself as a mongrel; both grandmothers were African and both grandfathers were European. Walcott's hybrid heritage prevents him from identifying directly with one culture and creates a sense of anxiety and isolation. The wind "ruffling the tawny pelt of Africa" refers to the cruelty of Mau-Mau insurrection against the violence of British colonialism. The words "corpses, paradise, dead, Jews and cursed" create an atmosphere of religion in the poem. Walcott's feeling of affection for Africa and fondness for English tongue propagate the theme of love of anxiety.

16.3.7 Literary Devices in the Poem

Imagery : Walcott uses vivid imagery throughout the poem to create evocative visual and sensory experiences for the reader. For example, he describes "the noiseless, patient spiders / of the African churches" and "the bloodstreams of the Congo" to evoke the sights and sounds of Africa.

Symbolism : The poem is replete with symbolism, with various elements representing broader ideas or concepts. For instance, Africa symbolizes the poet's ancestral homeland and cultural heritage, while the "fossil bird" represents the poet's sense of connection to a distant past.

Alliteration : Walcott employs alliteration, or the repetition of consonant sounds, to create rhythm and musicality in the poem. For example, in the line "The sun sought thy dim bed and brought forth light", the repetition of the "s" sound emphasizes the movement of the sun.

Metaphor : The poem contains several metaphors, where one thing is described in terms of another to convey deeper meaning. For example, Walcott describes the poet's struggle with identity as "the blanched, klieg-lighted blankness of a world / which circumcised him" - here, the world is metaphorically compared to a blinding light that obscures the poet's sense of self.

Personification : Walcott personifies abstract concepts or natural elements throughout the poem to imbue them with human-like qualities. For example, he personifies Africa as "the drained heart" and "the wasted vigil" to evoke a sense of longing and loss.

Repetition : The poem features repetition of certain phrases or images for emphasis and rhythm. For example, the phrase "A wind is ruffling" is repeated at the beginning of multiple stanzas to create a sense of continuity and movement.

Irony : Walcott employs irony to highlight the contradictions and complexities of the poet's relationship with Africa and colonialism. For example, he juxtaposes images of beauty and brutality in lines such as "A wind is ruffling the tawny pelt / Of Africa" to underscore the dual nature of the continent's history.

16.4 GLOSSARY

1. **Ruffling :** To disturb the smoothness or tranquility of something
2. **The tawny pelt :** The brownish fur-covered skin of an animal
3. **Kikuyu :** An ethnic group from Kenya, one of the largest ethnic groups in the country
4. **Batten :** To thrive or prosper at the expense of others
5. **Veldt :** Uncultivated country or grassland in Southern Africa
6. **Corpses :** Dead bodies
7. **Scattered :** Spread or thrown over a wide area

8. **Colonel of carrion :** A leader or figure of authority presiding over death and decay, emphasizing a sense of grim aftermath of violence or war
9. **Compassion :** Sympathy and concern for the sufferings or misfortunes of others
10. **Statistics justify :** Numerical data collected and analyzed to represent information
11. **Colonial policy :** The strategies and rules implemented by a colonial power to govern and manage its colonies
12. **Hacked :** Cut or chopped roughly or violently
13. **Expendable :** To be of little significance or value
14. **Threshed :** To be of little significance or value
15. **Ibises :** Plural of ibis, which is a type of long-legged wading bird with a long, down- curved bill, found in warm regions
16. **Parched river :** A river that has dried up or has very little water, usually due to drought or severe heat
17. **Beast-teeming plain :** A wide, flat area that is filled with wild animals
18. **Natural law :** The food chain according to nature in which animals kill to feed on other animals in order to survive.
19. **Upright man :** Someone who is morally sound, honest, and virtuous
20. **Inflicting pain :** The act of causing suffering or distress to others, either physically or emotionally
21. **Tightened carcass of a drum :** A drum made from the skin of a dead animal, stretched tightly to produce sound
22. **Native dread :** To an innate, deep-seated fear or apprehension, something instinctual and rooted in one's being or culture
23. **The white peace :** An idealized, pure form of peace, free from conflict and violence
24. **Brutish :** Behavior that is animalistic, lacking in human sensibilities, and often violent or insensitive
25. **Dirty cause :** The motivations or methods behind the cause are impure and unethical
26. **Gorilla :** symbolic representation of African people
27. **Superman :** symbolic representation of white race (colonizers)

16.5 LET US SUM UP

Dear learners, in this unit you have learned about the poet Dereck Walcott and his poetic style. You have also explored his background, life, and significant contributions to literature. Derek Walcott is known for his rich narrative style and vivid imagery. His work reflects his Caribbean heritage and deep engagement with cultural identity, Post colonialism, and history. His major works provides a broader perspective on his thematic concerns and stylistic touches.

The poem “A Far Cry from Africa” enriched us by Walcott’s intricate wordplay and intense insights which requires a careful consideration of its background and introduction. The title of the poem reveals a lot about its central themes and the poet’s intentions. We have also analysed the various themes, such as identity, colonialism, and the interplay between tradition and modernity.

You have also studied a stanza-wise explanation that has been done to breaking down the poem's structure and dissect the meaning behind each line or section. It provides clarity and deeper understanding. Additionally, a critical appreciation has also been done to examine the poem's strengths, the poet's technique, and the emotional and intellectual impact on the reader. At last the literary devices used, such as metaphor, simile, alliteration, and imagery, also been discussed in this unit which further enhances the appreciation of Walcott's craft.

16.6 QUESTIONS

1. What is the significance of the title "A Far Cry from Africa"?
2. How does Derek Walcott explore the poet's relationship with Africa throughout the poem?
3. What role does imagery play in conveying the poet's sense of displacement and longing?
4. How does Walcott use historical references, such as the Mau Mau Uprising, to contextualize the poem's themes?
5. Discuss the use of symbolism in the poem, particularly in relation to Africa and the Caribbean.
6. Analyze the poem's structure and form. How does it contribute to the overall impact of the poem?
7. Discuss the significance of the natural imagery in the poem, such as references to landscapes and animals.
8. What is the poet's attitude towards colonialism and its impact on Caribbean and African societies?
9. How does "A Far Cry from Africa" reflect broader themes of postcolonial literature and diasporic identity?

16.7 FURTHER READINGS

- Baugh, Edwaar. *Dereck Walcott*. Cambridge, Cambridge University Press, 2006.
- https ://www.poetryfoundation.org/poets/derek-walcott
- https ://www.nobelprize.org/prizes/literature/1992/walcott/facts/
- https ://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Derek-Walcott
- https ://deshapran.com/wp-content/uploads/2020/09/A-Far-Cry-From-Africa.pdf
- https ://www.studocu.com/row/document/national-university-of-modern-languages/literature/critical-analysis-of-a-far-cry/20871046
- https ://egyankosh.ac.in/handle/123456789/87248
- https://kccollege.ac.in/uploads/959ba388d4a0cd251a2d30802575a371Mahananda%20A%20Far%20cry%20from%20Africa.pdf
- https ://www.uou.ac.in/sites/default/files/slm/MAEL-609.pdf